



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 03

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: How Dare You Hit Me?

Master Bai watched the bamboo forest shook and slowly stopped frowning. He said softly, "No matter what happens in the coming three days, I don't want to be disturbed... I need to relax and calm myself down."

[The more intense things are, the more relaxed I need to be. I guess I should give myself a vacation...] Master Bai smiled casually, [Even though the pressures are all on my shoulder, if I don't care, who can compel me to?]

Thinking about that, he suddenly laughed loudly. He seemed to be extremely relaxed at the moment.

At the night, Ye Xiao was cultivating, and so was Song Jue. Wan Zhenghao and others were also cultivating.

The moon was bright in the sky. Its glow had lit up the whole world. It was a bright moon.

The moon remained the same until Ye Xiao got out in the latter part of the night. In fact... the moon kept being bright for a whole night.

The strangest thing was that no matter who was cultivating that night, when they stopped, they would realize that their cultivation had improved so much faster than before.

After cultivating one night, they were improved like they had been cultivating for ten days.

It was weird, but they all kept it a secret in mind and didn't want to tell anybody.

They thought it was their great fortune after all, so they wouldn't want to let others know. It would just draw jealousy.

There was another thing that happened that night.

The whole family of Wang Danian, the head of the guards in the Crown Prince's Palace, got wiped out, including their servants.

No one survived.

All dead bodies were placed tidily in their yard.

Wang Danian's face was in extreme horror. It seemed he had been terrified badly before he died.

There were lots of wounds on his body. His inner organs were all ripped into pieces.

Apparently, the murderer or murderers were questioning him before they killed him.

Nobody knew what the murderer wanted to know, and nobody knew how Wan Danian answered. It stayed as an unsolved mystery.

At the noon of the next day, the news about Wang Danian's death finally spread out.

For other families, most of them would just sigh. Some of them were gloating and they incensed to their ancestors to celebrate - finally, another monster vanished...

[Wang Danian must have messed with someone he should never did. Otherwise, how could he die so miserably?]

The Crown Prince showed a totally different attitude when he heard about it.

He jumped up from the chair and his face suddenly turned pale.

"What... Anybody knows who did it?"

"Anybody knows what the murderer asked Wang Danian?"

When he asked the two questions, he was heavily sweating.

He knew that there was something that if Wang Danian told to others, it would lead to a severe consequence.

However, nobody could answer him.

Maybe there was someone who had the answers, and it was whoever killed the whole family of Wang Danian.

However, the murderer would never answer him after all.

The Crown Princess stood aside coldly and said blandly, "Even if the murderer did get to know the truth about your dirty secret, so what? It might not be someone of the House of Ye. In fact, even if it was, so what? Don't forget that no matter how strong that man is, he is merely an underling of the Kingdom of Chen. And you, you are the noble heir of the throne, the kin of the dragons, the Crown Prince. I don't understand what you are so afraid of?"

The Crown Prince said annoyedly, "What do you woman know about it? It is easy for you to talk. If it really is that simple, would I be so troubled? The kingdom is now in danger. We need Ye Nantian to save us all. Even if we are in a peaceful time, he is still a great powerful man. The royal kin means nothing to him. And you actually didn't realize such an apparent situation?"

- Pah! - He threw a cup on the floor and said with anger, "At the very least, I am merely a Crown Prince! Merely! Do you understand?"

"I do." The Crown Princess said coldly, "The kind that will be replaced at anytime."

- Pahh! -

The Crown Prince slapped her on the face and said with a horrible expression, "Don't ever say that again, you cunt!"

The Crown Princess's face was pushed aside. Her hair were flying. She turned over her face slowly and kept her eyes half-closed. She said coldly, "How dare you?"

The Crown Prince said coldly, "What? Can't I?"

The Crown Princess nodded slowly and said blandly, "Yes, you can."

And then all of a sudden, she jumped up and grabbed the Crown Prince's hair. She pushed him down and held him to the floor. And then she slapped on him fiercely, "Since I married you, I have brought you countless advantages. I have given you your present position. Now you hit me? How dare you hit me?"

And then she slapped him again.

"Without my Mu Clan, without me, do you really think you can be the Crown Prince yourself? You are merely an ordinary useless prince. You are the second son of the king. You have no schemes or profound thoughts. Now you dare to hit me?"

The Crown Princess was stronger than the Crown Prince. He was now restrained by his wife and couldn't get free. His face turned

red because of being slapped. He could move a bit, but he only shouted angrily, "Get off me!"

"Those plots we made for you in those years. At first, we made the oldest prince die. And then we let the Concubine Li get caught for adultery. We made the Queen Yu get abrogated. We killed those youngest princes in their swaddles... We did all these things successfully and made you the Crown Prince. The Mu Clan did them all! Now you hit me?!"

She slapped him again. Her pretty face actually became horrible.

"My brother kept hanging among those people with powers in the court because of you. He had done a lot and suffered a lot. When he died, you didn't even avenge him! Now you hit me?"

She didn't stop talking or slapping. She slapped faster and faster, heavier and heavier. The slapping was like raining.

- Pah! Pah! Pah! Pah! Pahhh... -

Since they got married, the Crown Prince had always been the one who made the calls. The Crown Princess never violated him ever. This was the first time she actually took an aggressive move to her husband. It was truly a drastic move.

It had been just a while and the Crown Prince had been slapped into a turgid face. He couldn't stop moaning.

He had been the Crown Prince firmly for years. He enjoyed the high position and he did develop into a distinguished man. He had been able to hide the emotions deep in his heart.

However, under such torture, all those he developed were gone.

He was just a pathetic poor guy who kept being slapped.

After a while, the Crown Princess finally vented her anger. She gasped and stood up slowly. She said with pride, "Your highness, never see yourself a noble Crown Prince with a high position in front of me. I am handling all your darkest histories... Never treat women as if they are something you can casually insult. Sometimes, a woman's strength can be so strong that you can't even resist it. Do you understand? Do you get it?"

"We can support you, and we can also destroy you." When she said this, she sounded extremely cold-blooded.

The Prince breathed heavily. He stood up staggeringly and spat out something with blood. When he looked at the Crown Princess, there was fear in his eyes. He murmured, "If you didn't tell me to poison Ye Xiao, how could I end up like this? We have messed with Ye Nantian, who is powerful, law-breaking and horrible. If he truly turned against us, we are so going to die. Don't you think you are to be blamed too?"

The Crown Princess said coldly, "Do you think we should talk about right and wrong at the moment? It was one step of our plan to poison Ye Xiao. Didn't you agree with it? There were a lot more

steps other than poisoning Ye Xiao. And we only wanted to make you stay firm as the Crown Prince and crack down your two brothers. Poisoning Ye Xiao to make Ye Nantian turn crazy should be the most important step to weaken the king's strength. If not, how can you control the armies? All steps were well proceeded. The only mistake is that Ye Nantian is in control of the military force of the kingdom too much. We can barely challenge it. Yet it is never a mistake from the plan. Sometimes, people are weaker compared to what they planned. It is not our fault."

The Crown Prince was quiet. And then he suddenly shouted, "Not your fault? You are truly good in shifting the blame. Wasn't your Mu Clan handling everything? You have done everything and pushed everything to the edges. Then you messed with somebody you could never be able to deal with, so you just left! All of you! You all left me such a shitty mess. That is what your Mu Clan has done!"

"The famous Mu Clan has offended a maid of someone called Master Bai. It was just a maid. She actually scared such a great clan to a trembling tortoise... Hahaha... Haha... The eight noble clans... The eight noble clans... I thought you must be very powerful and strong. Yet I was wrong. When you messed with someone stronger, you actually went to his door and kneeled asking for forgiveness. Even though he had killed hundreds of your men, you still kneeled to them for forgiveness... Hahaha... What a powerful Mu Clan!"

The Crown Prince was sneering.

At the moment, a cold voice sounded out of nowhere, "People

from the Mu Clan have always been here. We never truly left. It was you, your highness. You have left us."

...

Chapter 202: I Need You To Speed Up

A man who was tall and slim weirdly showed up in front of the Crown Prince like a shadow. He looked askance at the Crown Prince, "Your highness, you only need to play your role as a Crown Prince and don't need to worry about anything else. As for the Mu Clan, no matter what we do, whether begging humbly or being aggressive, that is our own business.

The truth is, in the history, none of those kingdoms could last longer than five hundred years. They would all fall eventually. However, the eight noble clans, we have been lasting for thousands of years."

The tall man spoke coldly, "There have been too many useless princes in the royal family. That is the reason why this kingdom is doomed to fall. People like you in our clan would have been assigned to clean toilets."

He was indifferent about the dark expression on the Crown Prince's face. He turned to the Crown Princess and said, "You should stay on this moron's side and watch him. We don't need anything else. We just need him to sit on the throne."

"Yes, Uncle." The Crown Princess answered reverently.

"We came to the Chen-Xing City not only to resolve the problem between the Mu Clan and the House of Chaotic Storms, but also to get enough ingathering during the auction. Furthermore, we will kill that General Ye's son, Ye Xiao, to avenge your brother."

The tall man's voice was cold and decisive. It sounded like irons clashing against each other, loud and powerful.

"Thank you for your concern, Uncle." The Crown Princess wept and bowed slowly.

...

Ye Xiao came home before dawn.

He was now holding a jade bottle.

There was a little liquid inside the bottle.

Ye Xiao recognized it by only smelling.

It was the Cyan Fruit Poison, which had killed the previous Ye Xiao, the real owner of his body.

He had known that this poison came from the Crown Prince's Palace. That was what Wang Danian had told him.

However, Wang Danian had only known that it was from the upper realm. That's all.

Moreover, the person who sent Wang Danian to poison Ye Xiao

was not the Crown Prince. It was Mu Chengbai who had been killed long ago by Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was surprised and unhappy about it. He hadn't thought that he had actually avenged the former "Ye Xiao" long ago.

He wasn't really happy about the move this time though.

When Ye Nantian was proceeding with the cleaning mission, he didn't deal with people on the Crown Prince's side because of the king. That was why Wang Danian survived.

This time, Wang Danian's entire family became a scapegoat, or a vent to Ye Xiao's anger.

Ye Xiao had been quite upset in the recent days. He needed to vent his anger. So he thought, [Why keep them alive? Knowing their existence only makes me feel bad.]

So he went to Wang Danian's place at night when it was dark. And he used some torturing methods to force Wang Danian to tell the truth about how "Ye Xiao" died. Under Ye Xiao's tortures, no one could keep hiding anything in mind...

However, he was still upset. The anger was still there.

Because the Crown Prince was still living well. But Ye Xiao couldn't kill him yet.

After that, Ye Xiao went to the Ling-Bao Hall salesroom.

There were still 25 days before the auction would begin. That was not a short time.

Ling-Bao Hall was well guarded at the moment. Ling-Bao Hall got the security support from the royal house of the Kingdom of Chen and from the military forces. With Ling-Bao Hall's security force, the three forces worked together. That was such a strong force that was even stronger than the royal security group.

Under such protection, even Ye Xiao felt it difficult to get inside the salesroom secretly.

Ye Xiao reckoned that after a few days, he would be unable to get access to the salesroom casually. There would be a lot of super cultivators arriving for the auction. They wouldn't want any unrecognized person to get in the Ling-Bao Hall. It concerned their own interests after all.

With his current capability, if he wanted to cover his double identities and secretly enter the salesroom, that would be a tough mission.

Wan Zhenghao had been looking forward for his Monarch's arrival. He felt it had been three years after missing the Monarch for one day. Now he saw Ye Xiao as if he was meeting a living god.

"Liu Changjun, how is everything going?" Ye Xiao sat on the chair leisurely.

"We are still working on it. There are some certain achievements." Every time when Liu Changjun met Ye Xiao, no matter whether it was Ye Xiao or Feng Zhiling the Monarch, he would secretly feel admiration.

It was a feeling of looking at a huge mountain with respect, knowing that he would never be able to reach the top.

He had no idea why he would feel like that.

"Hmm. Good. Keep working harder." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "When you fully proceed to your current work and have over ten thousand underlings, I will teach you the secret of being the king of assassin as a reward.

That is the sword of the king in the assassination world. An assassin king should have such power."

Ye Xiao's eyes were sharp, and he was staring at Liu Changjun's eyes.

He could feel how Liu Changjun changed his attitude towards him. Liu Changjun was now completely compliant to him. Ye Xiao didn't know why too. Yet when he thought about how Liu Changjun could sense things unbelievably, he only felt happy about it.

"The sword of the king in the assassination world..." Liu Changjun was shaking. He said, "Can I ask... what its name is?"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "It is... One Sword Through The World."

Liu Changjun took a deep breath in. His face turned red because of excitement. His hands were shaking. He took in a deep breath and then out. Apparently, he was trying to calm himself down. Yet he couldn't.

One Sword Through The World.

It was a sword move that only could be heard in the myth of the Land of Han-Yang.

It was said that there was an assassin long long ago. He had gained this martial art and then became the No. 1 assassin in the Land of Han-Yang within three years. In ten years, he broke the limit of the cultivation and left the Land of Han-Yang for the upper realm.

His story became a myth in the assassination world.

When he was in the Land of Han-Yang, there was no one he couldn't kill.

He could easily complete all the assassination missions.

After him, there showed up many Assassin Kings, however, no one could be a match to him.

He was the legend to all assassins in the whole land.

"I need you to speed up in raising my own force, including the intelligence group and the assassination group. All of them." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "What we are doing now seems to be too slow."

"It is too slow." Ye Xiao emphasized it.

"Yes." Wan Zhenghao and Liu Changjun bowed together, feeling their backs covered in cold sweat. They were scared.

"I don't want your promises. I want the results." Ye Xiao took the precious medical materials that Wan Zhenghao had prepared for him and stood up, "The next few days, I won't come. After the auction begins, I will be back... Hurry up and finish whatever I told you to."

The two of them both promised.

Ye Xiao stopped talking and disappeared.

After Ye Xiao left, Wan Zhenghao and Liu Changjun looked at each other for a long time. Wan Zhenghao said, "What happened to our boss? Why is he so hurried all of a sudden? He can't be crazy,

can he?"

Liu Changjun spoke with a cold face, "Mind your words, Mr. Wan. We don't need to know why. We only need to do whatever we should do. Nothing else is important to us."

Wan Zhenghao twitched his face and said, "Yes. That's true. Nothing else is important."

In fact, he was cursing inside his heart.

Since this assassin had arrived, he always showed a cold face to Wan Zhenghao. Wan Zhenghao had tried to get close to him, but didn't know what to do.

The only situation that they could talk was when Liu Changjun needed money. It was simple conversations though. Liu Changjun merely reached out his hand and said, "I am out of money."

That's all.

It truly seemed nothing else was important to him.

Wan Zhenghao always wanted to shout out, "None of my business if you're out of money!"

Yet Liu Changjun just stood there with his hand in front of Wan Zhenghao. His eyes were sharp like swords pointing at his throat...

Wan Zhenghao had no other choice but give him the money he wanted.

The most unbelievable thing to Wan Zhenghao was that no matter how much Liu Changjun got, he would spend all of them within one single day.

If he came back with some money with him, Wan Zhenghao would feel like killing him at once, because that must be a fake Liu Changjun...

Liu Changjun kept spending money like this, so the assassins network had been expanding rapidly. The intelligence network was like a huge spider net too.

Wan Zhenghao had recruited twice some statisticians. It seemed after one or two days, he had to recruit more again...

However, Wan Zhenghao was rich. Liu Changjun was spending money for some real works. And it was proceeding well.

Wan Zhenghao wasn't truly stingy about money.

What he couldn't stand was that...

Liu Changjun didn't seem like seeing a person when he saw Wan Zhenghao. He was like looking at his target or a pole of fat meat.

[Such a hateful personality. I guess you could only be an assassin. You must suck on all other businesses. You are bound to end up an assassin your whole life.]

...

Chapter 203: Irritated at Each Other

Wan Zhenghao was cursing inside his mind, [He doesn't drink. He doesn't gamble. He doesn't play with women. He is not interested in any entertainments in the world. Nothing is important to him. Everyday I see him, he is always just in a daze looking at his sword. He is always covered by an aura of 'don't approach me' feeling. He only seems to be interested in his sword. Nothing else... Shxt. I can't believe there is actually such a weirdo in the world!]

He rubbed his beer belly and went to his room to sleep.

"Hold on." Liu Changjun spoke coldly.

Wan Zhenghao turned around and his face was twisted, "What do you want?"

"I am out of money." Liu Changjun looked at him indifferently. He stared at Wan Zhenghao's throat and said the words that he had kept saying to Wan Zhenghao.

"I seriously warn you again!" Wan Zhenghao spoke fiercely, "I will give you money when you are in need, but please don't stare at me like that! My throat, my heart... Every important place of my body! Please! I am begging you!"

Liu Changjun reached his hand and stayed quiet coldly. His eyes were still staring Wan Zhenghao's body.

"Here! Here it is!" Wan Zhenghao was extremely annoyed. He really wanted to kill himself. He took out a big pile of notes and threw them to Liu Changjun. And then he hurriedly turned around and left quickly. He just wanted to leave as soon as he could.

He truly didn't want to be with that guy anymore!

[What the hell is he!]

Liu Changjun didn't leave the Ling-Bao Hall right away like he always did. He walked to the yard quickly. There were some first-class assassins that he had recruited earlier and some people that were perfect to be developed into good assassins. After training them for half an hour, he finally left for some other business.

[Master said that I needed to speed up and power up!

Then I shall speed up and power up!

I shall do whatever I can to make things go faster and more efficient.]

...

When Ye Xiao left the salesroom, it was already early in the morning.

He casually walked to a street.

And then he kept walking to the direction to the Palace of Hua-Yang.

He stopped and suddenly thought of the words of Su Ye-Yue. "Ye Xiao, I am your wife today!"

"Xiao-Xiao, don't forget to find me!"

"Xiao-Xiao..."

The jade on his neck seemed to be heating up. It was like reminding him of something.

The girl with a pretty face must be in the Human Realm Above Heavens.

Ye Xiao raised his head and looked at the sky as a sigh escaped from his lips.

He was suddenly upset about being apart to the girl.

The sweet girl who always put her hands on her back and jumped whenever she was walking; the sweet girl who had always tilted her jaw and raised her head while looking at him; the sweet girl who stood in front of him, trying to protect him with her weak body at that fatal moment... who put all her true love and her

future on his shoulders...

He was temporarily unable to see her again.

Maybe... it would be a long time before he could see her again!

Ye Xiao spoke sentimentally, "It is like a dream from the previous life to the present life. Everything in the human world seems like disappearing fogs. The most difficult thing to forget is the love from a genuine girl. I swear I will bring my sword to make my name resounding in the Human Realm Above Heavens!"

He was upset at the moment, so he casually spoke some verse.

He left after finishing these phrases.

Suddenly, someone applauded.

- Pah! -

- Pah! pah! -

And then a soft voice sounded, "Good verse! Good ambition! You truly are the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He immediately calmed himself down. He turned around and smiled, "You came fast."

In front of him, there was a girl dressed in white standing there. She was tall and slim with a white silk on her face. On her dress, there was a mist lotus.

She was the girl who had a story with Feng Zhiling before, Wenren Chuchu.

Behind the silk, her eyes which were as shiny as stars were staring at Ye Xiao. Those were eyes like pearls in the sea. She could beat most of other girls in beauty with only her eyes.

At the moment, there were some complex feelings in her wonderful eyes. There was indifference, as well as also anger.

"Did I? That was not fast!" Wenren Chuchu smiled blandly and said, "If I don't come quickly, how can I realize Brother Feng is actually so good at literature. I am truly admiring you."

Ye Xiao smiled, "That is nothing. I was disgracing myself."

He could sense that Wenren Chuchu was having some complex emotions. She could have burst it out at any moment. Once she did, that would be a huge explosion.

Ye Xiao didn't really understand a girl's mind, yet he wisely avoided such a topic.

He knew that this girl was not weak like she looked like. She was a dangerous figure.

He could still feel the pain when he was being punched by this girl. He still didn't know why she was so mad at him.

It wasn't a happy memory about him being beaten up. It was a much worse memory that he got beaten up by a girl. And it was the worst memory that he didn't know why he got beaten up!

Facing such a girl, he thought that he should be rather careful when talking to her! He didn't know when, how and why she would suddenly get mad at him!

Wenren Chuchu didn't hear what she wanted to know from Ye Xiao. She wouldn't give up, so she blandly said, "It is like a dream from the previous life to the present life. Everything in the human world seems like disappearing fogs. The most difficult thing to forget is the love from a genuine girl... Brother Feng, may I ask what this 'the love from a genuine girl' means? Maybe you can explain it to me."

Ye Xiao spoke coldly, "I don't have anything to explain to you. Don't you think the love from a genuine girl means something?"

Wenren Chuchu said, "Of course I understand how difficult it is to lose genuine feelings from a girl. However, when you were saying it, I heard the sadness in your voice. Apparently, such a love from a girl must mean more in your situation!"

She didn't wait for Ye Xiao's answer and continued, "The sadness was from the bottom of your heart. I am afraid you must be sad for a special someone in your heart, right?"

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "It is merely my own business. I am afraid you don't have to be involved with it, right?"

He thought it was reasonable to say so.

However, Wenren Chuchu was furious after hearing that.

[What? I don't have to be involved with it? You mean I have nothing to do with it?]

She gritted with her teeth. [I have been touched by you all around my body! Now you are thinking about other girls! And you actually said those words in front of me! If I have nothing to do with it, then who does?]

If Ye Xiao could hear her, he would be rather confused. [Come on madam! I am thinking about my girl. Does it have anything to do with you? Why can't I think about other girls? Who do you think you are to me?!]

Wenren Chuchu was here for some serious business. However, as they had started this topic, she had to figure it all out.

"Heh, heh. Of course I have nothing to do with it. I am not someone special to you anyway." She spoke calmly, "However, I am

just curious. Who on earth has such luck and sharp eyes, and can be so smart to choose you among all the heroes and handsome men in this world?"

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "Sharp eyes? Listen to you... Are you saying that I am ugly? Do you mean I shouldn't be liked by girls? At least no one should fall in love with me in first sight?!"

Wenren Chuchu smiled and said, "I didn't say that. But you are getting close. I mean that there must be something wrong with her eyes. That is correct."

Ye Xiao was mad as he said, "You are betraying your conscience. I, Feng Zhiling, am tall, stately and handsome. I am good-looking and have a perfect body. I am in a good position, and I have power and wealth. I must be the golden man that all the girls in the world will come after."

Wenren Chuchu couldn't help laughing till she bended down. She said, "Fine. I won't judge your appearance no matter how you lie about it. The your confidence must be the No. 1 in the world. Nobody can be a match to you."

And then she continued, "I wonder, what kind of beautiful girl she is to make Brother Feng fall so deep in love? Who is she?"

She intentionally acted like she was shy and said, "It can't be me... can it?"

Ye Xiao was stunned, and then he laughed and said, "Your confidence is also rare in the world. I think I am not a match to you on such a point though. I won't accept the 'No. 1' you gave me. I should give it back to you."

Wenren Chuchu was angry as her eyes became cold, "Brother Feng, you are truly good at talking. Your words are sharp, and your tongue is like a knife."

Ye Xiao said, "You too have sharp eyes, a deep mind and wise schemes. Although your face is somehow a flaw, you already have enough advantages to make everybody else jealous. You don't need to care too much about it though. There is never a perfect person. If one's life is too good, then the gods will punish her..."

"Shut the fxck up!" Wenren Chuchu finally burst out and shouted. Her eyes were full of cold glows like lightning, "Brother Feng, you went too far by saying such words to a girl!"

Ye Xiao spoke with a sincere tone, "Facing your face, I truly couldn't say words like pretty, beautiful, gorgeous... I am not like you who can say things against the conscience. Please forgive me. Please."

They were in equal positions. In fact, Wenren Chuchu was the one who needed help. Ye Xiao was upset and annoyed before they met, and he had been irritated by Wenren Chuchu. That would never bring about any good words in their conversation.

...

Chapter 204: Taboo About Ladies

Wenren Chuchu was furious. She was shaking while she gritted with her teeth, "Feng Zhiling! You! Don't push me! I will kill you!"

Ye Xiao was stunned and he said, "Kill me? Why? Don't you want me to cure your master?"

Before he finished his words, Wenren Chuchu rushed over to him and waved her sleeves. Her two small white hands moved extremely fast. Suddenly, countless white small hands filled the space. They were all striking down to Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao didn't know she would truly attack him. She was the one who needed help after all. She shouldn't actually attack him even though she was annoyed. That was why Ye Xiao didn't want to show the impression of weakness and kept countering her. He just wanted to regain his honor in front of her.

Yet he hadn't thought that she would actually attack him so fiercely and so fast!

It was lucky that Ye Xiao was experienced. He was surprised but not in a panic. He stepped aside and raised his hand. A golden glow appeared. - Bang! - He struck with the golden hand and stepped back at the same time.

He didn't fear fighting against Wenren Chuchu. He had fought against her once. Well, it was more like him being punched hard by her, yet he knew what she was capable of now. Last time, she

was at the ninth level of the Earth Origin Stage. It hadn't been a long time, so even if she had been improved, it wouldn't be much. It was already shocking if she could break through the Sky Origin Stage.

Wenren Chuchu must have had a powerful background. Her mentor might be from the Qing-Yun Realm. Ye Xiao knew that he couldn't treat her like normal people. However, he was so close to the Sky Origin Stage himself. He was confident that he could easily defeat enemies at about the fifth level of the Sky Origin Stage. Now that he was facing the attacks from Wenren Chuchu, he was calm and steady.

Wenren Chuchu was attacking in a wide range. Ye Xiao didn't have any space to dodge, so he didn't choose to dodge. He defended it with the golden hand. It became weaker when the power was divided into multiple pieces. That was why her attack wouldn't be that powerful. The Golden Hand was strong and powerful. Ye Xiao was confident that he would win this round!

However, things were out of his expectations.

Facing the golden glow of the Golden Hand, Wenren Chuchu was indifferent. She still used the same attack. Her eyes turned sharp and her hands were striking down right on Ye Xiao.

- Boom! - She hit on Ye Xiao's golden hand.

That was a firm hit. The stronger one would win. That was obvious.

Ye Xiao felt that his body was shocked like he was stricken by thunder. A strange power suddenly spread inside his body like a cold stream. He stepped back a few steps. Wenren Chuchu was actually staying still. In fact, she actually stepped forward!

She was trying to get up on Ye Xiao. Such a huge crashing had not produced any impact on her.

Ye Xiao realized he was hooked.

He had stepped back almost eight steps, yet it hadn't offset the power that had stricken on him. He had no more space to step back, because there was a wall behind him.

He reacted quickly. There was no room for him to retreat, yet he still leaned heavily to the wall. His back crashed on the wall firmly.

- Crack! -

The wall was too weak to hold his strong power. A big hole appeared on the wall. The dust was flying all around. Ye Xiao's figure just flashed inside the flying dust and then disappeared.

That was One Laughter in Skyline!

Within only a short time, Ye Xiao realized that this Lady Wenren must be one of the most powerful superior cultivators in this

world!

She was much stronger than the initial levels of the Sky Origin Stage. In fact, she was most definitely at the Grandmaster Levels of Sky Origin Stage! The capability she had shown to Ye Xiao the last time was absolutely not her present cultivation capability!

It had only been such a short time, yet she had already improved to such a level! It was unbelievable!

However, Ye Xiao didn't really care about how strong Wenren Chuchu was or why she could be so strong. He was far behind her on cultivation, so he was definitely not a match to her. But he was capable in escaping from her grasp. Besides, she was here for his help, so she would never really kill him!

Even though she had been attacking fiercely, she just wanted to beat Ye Xiao up hard. It wasn't a killing move. As a man who had been the Monarch in the Qing-Yun Realm, Ye Xiao surely knew it!

However, he didn't understand why the girl would get so mad at him. He thought she must be somehow crazy.

[What is her problem?

Fine. I guess I should just get away as soon as I can.

She is the one who needs help after all. She will come to me again sooner or later.

It is better to escape than be captured by her. If I am captured again, that will be a serious problem!

It must be far worse than last time!]

He made up his mind and left at once.

When he just got away from the dust cloud, he felt something blowing his back. It was a long, white sleeve rushing over like a long dragon. It was so close to bind his waist.

Ye Xiao slightly shouted and his body rolled in an instant. He operated the One Laughter in Skyline in full effort!

- Shoot! - His body had moved dozens of meters away. He had actually made three turns and he was like a flying star rushing along the streets.

At the same time, he was shouting, "What the hell! How can you run so fast with your fat body!"

"What did you just say?" Wenren Chuchu screamed, and the flames of anger in her voice seemed to be rushing up to the realm above heavens!

She had just tried to give Ye Xiao a lesson and then let him go, but now her eyes turned totally red!

She suddenly rushed up to the sky and looked down to survey the surroundings. And then she rushed forward to where Ye Xiao was going. She was catching up like a thunder.

She actually didn't care about whether she would expose her body or not.

Ye Xiao felt disturbed. [What is wrong with this lady? What is she thinking? She is so unreasonable!

Come on! You are the one who needs my help. How come you just showed up and tried everything to assault me? Those were some serious attacks although they were not killing moves. It still hurts to get hit...

And now you are running wild.

Women are truly difficult to deal with...] Ye Xiao thought. He was moving faster and faster.

He got to know something though. Wenren Chuchu must have had a real superior cultivator as her company this time! This cultivator must be able to protect her well among millions of enemies.

Otherwise, as cautious as she was, she would never run wild like this in this country!

Thinking about that, Ye Xiao didn't head to the House of Ye. He was actually moving out to the wall of the city.

He still had no idea why Wenren Chuchu would act like this. In fact, Wenren Chuchu herself didn't really understand why she would be so mad.

In fact, when she saw Feng Zhiling, she felt happy somehow. Her heart was beating fast when she saw him. After following him for a few steps, she found that Ye Xiao suddenly stopped while speaking a verse in a sad tone...

It should be alright that he made a verse. However, the verse was about some love story with a girl in a sentimental tone. That was obviously a verse for a girl...

And then out of nowhere, the anger just appeared inside her heart, and she just couldn't hold it.

So she got to Ye Xiao and asked for troubles. All that she had planned was left behind. She just wanted to beat him up hard!

[You prick! How dare you fool me!

You are actually the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall, yet you lied to me that you are nobody!

And you actually have a girl in your heart!

You didn't have one the last time!]

The flame of anger erupted in her heart.

She couldn't hold the eagerness to vent her anger. Feng Zhiling himself was the perfect target for her to vent that anger!

She tried her best to catch him.

At the moment, the only thought in her mind was to catch up with Ye Xiao, push him down to the floor and beat him up badly! [How dare you call me fat!

I am only over forty kilograms! How dare you call me fat?

You blind bastard! What makes you think you can call me fat? How dare you! Have you seen my true face? Have you measured my weight yourself?

That is too just too much!]

She gritted with her teeth and chased after Ye Xiao. Her teeth were making sounds along the way.

She had not acted wildly like this since she was ten years old. However, she just couldn't hold herself this time.

If she was acutely aware what she was doing at the moment, she would definitely feel strange.

It was simply unbelievable!

It truly was unbelievable!

Ye Xiao was rapidly rushing away. He was operating the flying martial art in full effort.

The two of them were rushing over the land like two flying shiny stars. They got out of town within an instant, and then got to the wild land within another instant.

Wenren Chuchu was getting more and more furious. [He is obviously much weaker than me in cultivation. How come I can't catch him... What a prick!]

Ye Xiao didn't know that what he had said had offended the girl by saying everything that shouldn't be said to a lady.

That meant two things. One, never call a lady fat! Second, never call a lady ugly!

Ye Xiao had called the girl ugly as well as fat. And he actually made her think that it was because she was ugly and fat that Ye Xiao didn't like her...

Wenren Chuchu had been holding a complex feeling to him, so she couldn't stand it this time! It would be strange if she could!

Women, they are truly some strange creatures!

Ye Xiao ran into a forest like a whirlwind. He rushed straight to the ice mountain.

He felt so weird that the ice mountain he had created seemed to be a special place for him. He didn't know why he came here at all.

...

Chapter 205: Lock the Spiritual Mind; A Huge Threat

Many things had happened around the ice mountain recently.

The great superior cultivator, Gu Jinlong of the Dao Origin Stage, died here. Ye Xiao and Su Yeyue were attacked here. Su Yeyue met her super powerful master here. At the moment, Wenren Chuchu was hunting him here.

He really didn't know if it was his luck, or his misfortune.

Strong as Wenren Chuchu, if Ye Xiao led her to the House of Ye while his father was away, there would be nobody who could deal with her.

He just didn't want to draw the danger to his family. Besides, he didn't want to expose his true identity. He couldn't think of any place that he could most confidently get rid of her except for the ice mountain.

It was created by his own gelid qi after all. That was a work of him. So it was kind of his own home court. Moreover, he had set up many complex roads on the mountain in order to trap Gu Jinlong. They would be beneficial to him at this very moment. If Su Yeyue had listened to Ye Xiao and escaped through these roads, she would have left successfully.

As a stream of gelid qi came over, Ye Xiao entered the mountain

and disappeared right away.

Wenren Chuchu arrived just after Ye Xiao. However, she had lost sight of Ye Xiao within such a short time. What she could see was only the mist in the air all around her.

She thought for a while and then waved her sleeve. The mist actually split to two sides. She didn't hesitate and got into the mist in an instant.

There was a only short time for Ye Xiao to run further. He had already entered a cave like a whirlwind. When he entered the cave, he started to walk casually and straightly went to the exit. And then he turned back to the city without hesitation.

No matter how powerful Wenren Chuchu was, she wouldn't know Feng Zhiling had such a trick to play.

Ye Xiao was confident.

Yet something unexpected happened.

When he just began to return, he felt a strong vigor had locked him up in front of him.

The vigor was fierce and kingly.

It was like a dominator emitting glows to the world.

He thought for a while and then turned around and ran without even checking on it.

He could sense that the person who made such vigor must be much stronger than Wenren Chuchu. He could escape Wenren Chuchu even though he couldn't defeat her. But if he fought against this person, he would die.

Ye Xiao was reacting quickly. The vigor was, however, locking down on him. As he was hiding here and there, the vigor kept chasing him like his shadow.

No matter where he went, that vigor just followed him. It never left or disappeared. He just couldn't get rid of it.

His spiritual mind could sense a person. It was a woman in snow white clothes. She was just like ice and snow. She seemed to be standing right on the ice mountain, looking at him coldly.

No matter how he tried to escape, she just stood there looking. He couldn't get rid of her spiritual mind.

[What is wrong?]

Ye Xiao was confused. This was a low-class realm after all. The most powerful cultivator should be no higher than the Sky Origin Stage. However, recently, he had seen countless Sky Origin Stage cultivators. In fact, he had met those cultivators who were above

the limit of this realm.

Gu Jinlong was one; the Meng Huaqing was one; and also this woman in white. Although she was weaker than Meng Huaqing, and even weaker than Gu Jinlong, she was much stronger than Ye Xiao.

[Why does everything seem to be fooling me?

One after another, great superior cultivators keep showing up in such a low-class realm... Why...]

When he was thinking, a figure of white clothes flashed, and Wenren Chuchu was right in front of him.

Ye Xiao changed his expression to a normal state and laughed. He stood still and threw his hands up. He said, "I am tired. Let's end this chasing game. Ok?"

It sounded like it was just like a little game they were playing.

"Who do you think is playing with you?"

Wenren Chuchu was pissed. She spoke while gritting with her teeth, "Brother Feng, you ran so fast. I almost lost you. However, why don't you run now? Go on."

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "In fact, I don't think you need to work

so hard, Lady Wenren.

Wenren Chuchu said, "Hmm?"

Apparently, she didn't understand what Ye Xiao meant. She just stared at him with her big bright eyes.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "There is an old saying. It is easy for a girl to catch up with a guy, while it is difficult for a guy to catch up with a girl. You have been chasing me for such a long time running here and there in the cave. In fact, you really don't need to. Heh, heh. Lady, you are using a wrong method."

Wenren Chuchu was stunned, and then she understood what he meant. She suddenly blushed, and there were both anger and shyness in her eyes. She gritted with her teeth and said, "Then... what do you think I should do?"

Ye Xiao nodded and casually said, "If you think it is necessary too, you can beg me. I have a soft heart. I just can't stand being begged. Maybe I can close my eyes and give myself in. However, it would have been wasting my virginity..."

His voice was turning sad from peaceful. It sounded like somebody was doing something naughty to him.

"Go to hell!"

- Boom! -

Wenren Chuchu finally couldn't stand it. She gritted with her teeth and then kicked on his belly.

He screamed and flew out like a flying kite.

Wenren Chuchu humphed and didn't lose her mind. She followed up to him.

Ye Xiao was rolling in the air before he touched the floor. And then he was still moving on the floor to the foot of the mountain before he rolled three more times and stopped. He could finally look up.

He looked up to the huge threat before him.

...

Chapter 206: A Half Year Left to Live

He saw a gorgeous lady who was cold like ice and elegant like the moon standing in front of him.

Her eyes were sharp like two ice arrows shooting right on his eyes coldly.

Ye Xiao stretched his pupils in the eyes.

If he was right, this gorgeous lady was holding killing intent against him.

[Does she want to kill me?]

"You. Are you Feng Zhiling?" The lady in white had a clear and beautiful voice. Her tone was cold like ice, but it gave him a comfortable feeling.

"I am." Ye Xiao stared at her face for a long time.

The lady in white spoke blandly, "What are you looking at?"

"I am looking at you. I want to know what cultivation level you are at right now." Ye Xiao smiled, "I need to confirm what level you are, so that I can reckon how long can you stay alive."

The lady in white heard about the words about life and death, yet

her expression was still calm and cold. She just answered blandly, "Oh?"

Ye Xiao nodded, "I know you are indifferent. Maybe you truly don't care. Your cultivation ability is far above the limit of this world indeed. You think I cannot recognize what level you are, and you think I am bragging."

The lady in white said, "Are you not?"

Ye Xiao shook his head and said, "Of course not."

He smiled and said, "Normally, you should be right about this. However, I, Feng Zhiling, am not a normal person. Girl, you look pale and you have long breaths. It seems everything is fine on you, and nothing bad is happening to your body. You should be very healthy. But deep inside your eyes, there is a color of dark blue. Such blue has been gathering to your pupils. It must have turned into a circle now, right?"

The lady nodded in agreement

"Ordinary people cannot see it. Even if someone has a pair of sharp eyes and noticed it, it is possible that they would not be able to understand what it means. Most of them will think that you are a natural born beauty with a beautiful color in your eyes. It does make you look charming and pretty. However, it isn't natural after all.

It is caused by the martial art you have been cultivating.

When someday your pupils became dark blue too, and you still haven't eaten any Regeneration Jade Lotus, you will be in fatal danger. You can die at any second.

Your pupils have been developing to dark blue."

Ye Xiao smiled, "So, you don't have a lot of time before you die now. Even if you stop cultivating from now on, you will only have half a year left."

He paused and continued, "All right. I believe you are aware of your own condition. Am I right? You seem to have a broad mind facing death. I truly admire you."

The lady in white was still indifferent. She didn't say anything in response. In fact, she had agreed with Ye Xiao. It seemed that she truly didn't care much about her own life.

"What? What did you say?" A scream sounded behind Ye Xiao.

Wenren Chuchu arrived and stood in front of Ye Xiao. She stared at him tightly and spoke in a panic, "Brother Feng, you... you... Is it true?"

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "I told you. I can't be sure whether my opinion is right or not. I am not the one to make the call. You can ask this lady. She is the one we are talking about. She knows the

best about her own business. Hmm. She must be your master? I wouldn't know it if you don't panic like this."

Wenren Chuchu turned around, looked at the lady and said sadly, "Master, is it true? Do you really have only half a year left to live?"

The lady spoke blandly, "Maybe not as much. So what?"

Wenren Chuchu's body was shaking after she heard that. She staggered and said, "But Master... You... Why..."

The lady said, "That's why I came to the Land of Han-Yang."

Wenren Chuchu burst into tears. She wept and said, "I see... Master, you have never thought about getting cured. You never want to relieve the disease... You just... You just want to spend the rest of your time with me, right?"

The lady's cold eyes turned soft. She looked at her disciple and said lightly, "No."

"Yes! That's the truth!" Wenren Chuchu cried like crazy, "But... But we have a practical solution now, don't we? Even though you don't want to be touched by Brother Feng, I have found the Regeneration Ink Lotus! It will become the Regeneration Jade Lotus soon. Master, there is still hope! Why do you give up? Why?"

Why do you give up?!" She cried.

The lady was still looking at her with her soft eyes and didn't say anything for a long while.

The two of them, the master and the disciple, stood together. One had a silk on her face, while the other didn't. However, just like Ye Xiao had said, they didn't seem like master and disciple. They were more like sisters standing together.

In fact, the lady looked even younger. She looked like she was only seventeen years old.

In her eyes, which were looking at Wenren Chuchu, there was care and love. It was like a mother looking at her own daughter.

Wenren Chuchu's tears kept dropping down. She turned around looking at Ye Xiao and begged, "Brother Feng, look... My master... She... Do you have any other solution?"

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "I can't guarantee you anything though. I need to check more carefully and then come to a better conclusion. However, I need to tell you that the Regeneration Ink Lotus you gave me last time, it won't become a Regeneration Jade Lotus for you... Because it's gone."

Wenren Chuchu was shocked, "What? What did you just say? Did you... Did you ruin the Regeneration Ink Lotus? You..." And then her eyes were filled with killing intent. She kept staring at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao sensed the danger immediately. He didn't dare to fool her anymore and said, "Look at you. I meant... The Regeneration Ink Lotus has been developed successfully by me. It is the Regeneration Jade Lotus now. The Regeneration Ink Lotus is gone, but we have the Regeneration Jade Lotus now... You used your imagination on a negative way. Don't blame me."

[Little girl, now you know you shouldn't mess with me.

I can make you feel like in hell and also make you feel like in heaven by only saying some words.]

Wenren Chuchu was stunned and then smiled through her tears. She said in surprise, "Have you truly developed the Regeneration Ink Lotus successfully?"

...

Chapter 207: The Misty Cloud Palace

Ye Xiao smiled proudly, "What Feng Zhiling promises, it will be done! I know the disease that people in your sect will get, and I also know what you people should never do! Your sect treats virginity as more important than your lives. Besides, when you cultivate into some certain levels, you won't survive without this material... That is why I tried so hard to develop the Regeneration Ink Lotus after I got it. It is better to solve such a problem sooner than later..."

Wenren Chuchu was extremely happy when she heard so. She wiped the tears on her face and held the arms of the lady in white. She said happily, "Master, now we have the Regeneration Jade Lotus, you don't need to be touched by others, and it can temporarily suppress the... You..."

"I don't want it." The lady in white shook her head and said something that was so over Wenren Chuchu's expectation. Yet it was under Ye Xiao's expectation.

"Master... What did you say? You don't want it? It is the only thing that can keep you alive... You..." Wenren Chuchu couldn't believe it!

However, the lady in white just indifferently stood there without saying anything. She looked at the mountains far away. In her eyes, there was a sense of confusion, but they were most filled with decisiveness. The next moment, she smiled.

Ye Xiao sighed, "Do you still not understand that your master truly doesn't want to have the Regeneration Jade Lotus?"

"Why?" Wenren Chuchu was surprised and shouted. She seemed asking Ye Xiao and also asking the lady in white.

The lady in white smiled softly and rubbed Wenren Chuchu's hair. She was still quiet.

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Because she has her own master too... Her master must need one kind of the Regeneration Lotus. The Regeneration Jade Lotus could be developed into the Renaissance Jade Lotus after all; if there are a lot of precious medical materials to help... It may need a lot of time... Her master may not be able to wait till the day comes. I think it is more likely that she wants to save it for her disciple... She doesn't want to use it, because she wants to keep it till her disciple is in need. If her disciple works hard enough, it will be useful for her..."

"Am I right?" Ye Xiao looked at the lady in white and asked slowly.

The lady in white looked at him. Her eyes were cold again, but without killing intent anymore. She was still silent.

"Master!" Wenren Chuchu cried. Her eyes were full of tears and she was anxious, "Master, please don't do this. It is too early for me to have it. I may not be able to get to the stage as high as yours... How can you possibly sacrifice yourself for me like this..."

She was sobbing too much to speak, "Master, since the day I became your disciple, you always kept the good things for me. You never enjoyed anything better. However, this time, I can't be so selfish. Now it is lucky that Brother Feng developed a Regeneration Jade Lotus successfully. It is a proof for that the gods are blessing you. Please, I want you to be selfish one time. Don't be too hard on yourself... Please..."

The lady in white smiled and rubbed her hair lightly. She murmured, "Silly girl."

Wenren Chuchu cried out loudly with tears, "You keep thinking about me all the time. I can't lose you! You sacrifice whatever you have for me, but how can I be so selfish to accept it..."

The lady in white smiled, "It is unavoidable that we have to be apart with someone we love in our lives. It will happen sooner or later. We can't escape."

"Then let it be as late as it can be!" Wenren Chuchu shouted emotionally.

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Is it really so tough? The life in the Misty Cloud Palace?"

The lady in white was stunned. She turned to Ye Xiao, looking at him straight in the eyes. Her eyes became colder and colder, and then she spoke blandly, "You are an outstanding figure indeed. You actually know the Misty Cloud Palace of mine?"

Ye Xiao smiled, "It is so easy to earn the praise 'outstanding'. I have just heard about it. However, the Misty Cloud Palace is shocking the whole Qing-Yun Realm. It is one of the three Saint Palaces in the Qing-Yun Realm along with the Ice Cloud Palace and Jade Flower Palace. How can I possibly be qualified enough to have connections to such great forces. They are heavens for the mortal people. However, I just didn't know life can be tough in this kind of place."

The lady in white spoke blandly, "It seems you truly know a lot."

Ye Xiao nodded, "I know more. With your special personality, you must have an extremely tough life in the Misty Cloud Palace. No matter how strong and powerful you are, you are just not in the same pace with others."

"You are wrong." The lady in white shook her head slowly and she looked depressed.

Ye Xiao smiled and spoke, "There is a mountain above the Cyan Mountain. The mountain is inside the misty clouds. It stays in the mists for centuries, the No. 1 passage in the Qing-Yun Realm!"

"It truly is a distinguished place." Ye Xiao sighed.

He knew about the Misty Cloud Palace. That was no doubt. However, he had never been in touch with it. That was also the truth.

The main forces in the Qing-Yun Realm was like this: one man, two temples, three saint palaces and seven factions!

A man ruled the world. One of the two temples was located in the south, while the other in the north. The three saint palaces were hidden inside the mists. Seven factions were in the human world!

Ye Xiao's biggest enemies in his previous life were three of the seven factions. They were the most powerful factions among all.

However, when the three factions hunted down the Xiao Monarch, they got weakened a lot. They might have lost their top-three positions in the seven factions already!

"However, even though your Misty Cloud Palace is extremely powerful, the Ice Cloud Palace seems to be surpassing you. Even it isn't now, in the coming future, it will. That is the truth." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "The reason is simple. The reason is.... that in your Misty Cloud Palace, there is a problem in the most powerful group.

The problem is naturally... the martial art you are cultivating." Ye Xiao took a breath in and said, "Let me make a guess after analyzing all the facts I know. It should be... for some certain incident, your medical material garden was ruined. Or maybe the place you used to produce the Regeneration Ink Lotus, the Regeneration Jade Lotus and the Renaissance Jade Lotus was ruined by that incident. Right? Maybe... Maybe you just ran out of you good luck?"

The lady in white shrank her pupils. She looked at Ye Xiao and

took a deep breath in. She spoke in a deep voice, "I think you have known too much."

Saying so, she showed some killing intent again in her eyes.

For her, a man who knew that much secrets about the Misty Cloud Palace should be killed in an instant!

"I am an outstanding dan-maker. My work on developing the Regeneration Jade Lotus is the best proof." Ye Xiao spoke frankly, "Besides, what I know is some basic information about the Qing-Yun Realm. That is all."

...

Chapter 208: Bing Xinyue

The lady in white stayed quiet after hearing that. She turned around and looked at Wenren Chuchu. Yet when she talked again, she was talking to Ye Xiao, “Apparently, you are capable to support Chuchu till she needs the Regeneration Jade Lotus... As for the future, it will all depend on her own achievement.”

“I was planning to kill you. If you said your last sentence a second later, you should be a dead body now.” She spoke casually.

Ye Xiao said with a deep voice, “I know. That was why I said so. However, even if I didn’t say anything, you might still not kill me.”

“I really don’t want you dead at the moment. You are too important!” The lady in white said again.

Ye Xiao sighed, “You have let go of your own life and death long ago. You don’t care about your own life. Indeed, you don’t need my help. However, your disciple, Lady Chuchu, will never have a bright future without my help. It is my special gift to have the capability to develop the Regeneration Jade Lotus!

Such gift has made me so important that nobody in the Misty Cloud Palace can look down upon me.”

“The small and elegant body; the cold and clean virginity. The heart will prove to gods that I shall never be in love...” The lady in white sighed. She frowned heavily and said with sadness.

Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a while and then he said, “Those were some phrases that are difficult to understand.”

Wenren Chuchu was nervous. She looked at Ye Xiao and then looked at her master. She just didn’t know what she should do. She had totally lost the fierce vigor that she had shown in front of Ye Xiao earlier.

Ye Xiao was quiet for a while, and then he said, “I truly don’t understand. Can you explain it please?”

The lady in white sighed and said gently, “Sorry.”

Ye Xiao heard that and felt something was wrong. He was just about to step aside or say something to stop the lady when he suddenly lost sight. A mass of white figure had covered him fully.

And then he felt pain on his head. He then fell to the ground and fainted.

What he had heard before he passed out was Wenren Chuchu screaming, “No! Master... No!”

Once he had woken up, he could smell a light fragrance around him.

He didn’t need to open his eyes; he just knew where he was at the

moment. It was the residence of Wenren Chuchu. It was just the room that he had stayed before when he was captured.

He just smiled bitterly inside his heart.

[It seems I have some special connection with this place. I came to this place twice, and I was unconscious at both times.

I am just not sure whether I can get out of here alive or not!]

A slim figure was sitting around him silently.

Ye Xiao held his head and sat up. He shouted angrily, “I never said that I didn’t want to come. Did you really have to take me like this? What is wrong with you guys? Are you kidnapping me? Are you forcing me?”

The figure in white turned around quietly and said softly, “Sorry.”

Ye Xiao was annoyed and he said, “It is you.”

In this room, the lady who stayed with Ye Xiao alone was actually not Wenren Chuchu. Instead, it was her master, the mysterious lady in white.

The lady nodded and said, “Yes, it is.”

Ye Xiao humphed and said, “You captured me. What? You want me to cure you?”

The lady in white blushed. She showed a sense of anger in her eyes. Apparently, she knew clearly what that “cure” meant to her. She spoke blandly, “I don’t need you to cure me. I didn’t need it. I don’t need it now either. I will never need it in the future. I just... I just want to ask you something.”

Ye Xiao nodded and said, “Hmm. You haven’t told me your name yet. Can I have your name please?”

The lady in white answered quietly, “I am Bing Xinyue.”

Ye Xiao was shocked when hearing that. His face suddenly turned pale. It recovered soon though. Such a change on the face was truly a rare thing that would happen to the Xiao Monarch. He spoke with a hoarse voice, “Bing Xinyue... is a good name.”

Bing Xinyue looked at him feeling strange. She asked, “Feng Zhiling, why did your heart beat faster when you heard my name? And why did your face turn so strange. It suddenly lost the color of blood. You calmed yourself down immediately and maybe you think I wouldn’t notice. What? Does my name mean something special for you?”

“Nothing special though.” Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and smiled, “I have heard about your name before.”

“Oh? Really? From whom did you hear my name?” Bing Xinyue’s eyes became strange.

Ye Xiao said, “The Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue...”

Bing Xinyue spoke lightly, “The Broad Heaven Jun Yinglian... Do you know my Sister Jun?”

Ye Xiao was like being stabbed by a needle on his heart. He shook his head and said, “No. I don’t know your Sister Jun.”

Bing Xinyue said blandly, “If you know something about the Qing-Yun Realm, it wouldn’t be surprising for me. However, when the two phrases are put together, there must be less than five people who know about it. You, Feng Zhiling, are definitely not included. You shouldn’t be connected to anyone of these five people.”

Ye Xiao spoke bitterly, “You are mistaking me, Lady. I only know the former phrase. The latter one, I only heard it the first time today.”

Bing Xinyue said blandly, “That is reasonable. In fact, my Sister Jun didn’t have such a name before. She is such a poor lady. For an ungrateful man, she changed her name. However, heh, heh...”

She changed her name for an ungrateful man.

Jun Yinglian?

[Jun referred to whom?](#) And “Jun” should tenderly care about whom?

Ye Xiao coughed. He felt that he had a sore throat. He said, “Oh really? That is weird.”

Bing Xinyue smiled blandly and stopped the topic. When she looked at Ye Xiao, her eyes were full of some complex emotions.

Ye Xiao felt his heart in pain.

Jun Yinglian!

Jun Yinglian!

Such a familiar name to him. No matter how many lives he would get reborn, he would never forget this name, that girl and her face.

Ye Xiao sighed inside his heart. Some old memories were suddenly reminded in his heart.

“I met a little sister lately. She is a bit weak in cultivation at the moment, but she has a good personality. I like her.”

That was what Jun Ying-Lian had told the Xiao Monarch.

“Her name is Bing Xinyue. I love her name. I like her and her personality.”

“So I started to see her as my sister. We can support each other from now on. Can you do something to strengthen the connection between the both of us so that nobody dares to mess with her?”

That was what Jun Yinglian had asked the Xiao Monarch.

...

Jun(君) means ‘he’. Ying(应) means ‘should’. Lian(怜) means caring tenderly.

Chapter 209: You Can Do It!

Back then, the Xiao Monarch said, "Now that most of the famous figures all care about their titles, if we can link both of your names together, those small characters will very likely not mess with her because of their fear for you."

"Oh? Is it true?" Jun Yinglian said.

"In fact, you don't need to intentionally protect the people from the Misty Cloud Palace. You are actually being kind to her. That's all. Right?" Ye Xiao asked.

"That's true."

"Hmm. Look. What do you think?" Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "Let's make it 'Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue; Broad Heaven Jun Yinglian. How about that?"

"Great! That's great!" Jun Yinglian's face seemed glowing. She said, "Broad Heaven Jun Yinglian. Hmm. By the way, what's your poetry title?"

"I don't want to be involved into this thing. Count me out please."

"I think it will be better if we put your name in it too. Right? Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue; Broad Heaven Jun Yinglian; Chaotic Storm Xiao Monarch; A slight effort to conquer the heavens. That is so vigorous. Who dare not to step back when hearing such

lines?"

"Forget it. I am a man. Even though you don't care, we have to protect the little girl's fame. Besides, I am just by myself. I am afraid I can't be at the same stage with the huge forces behind you two."

"Hmm. Let's see what Yue-Yue would say. I don't really care anyway."

"Heh, heh. Yes. Just let things be how it is now."

At that day, after talking to Ye Xiao, Jun Yinglian told Bing Xinyue about it when they met. As expected, Bing Xinyue refused it right away, and this thing had come to no end.

Bing Xinyue was the big disciple of the Misty Cloud Palace after all. She was rather capable in cultivation herself. Although she was a soft and gentle girl, she was still proud and a little bit arrogant because she was from a great sect.

She surely knew that what Jun Yinglian proposed was good for her, yet she still said no.

Hence, the two phrases that brought Bing and Jun together had never truly spread in the world. That was why it was seldom for people to know about it.

A few years after that, Ye Xiao died in that incident. He had never

seen Bing Xinyue, but only heard about her from Jun Yinglian. Unexpectedly, he actually met her in the Land of Han-Yang this time.

[She is... her best friend. The sworn sister of... her. The best friend of... her.]

Ye Xiao coughed. When he looked at Bing Xinyue, his eyes had no unpleasantness anymore. He became kind and gentle. [It turns out this lady is Bing Xinyue, the girl she kept talking about.]

"The reason why I brought you here is that I want to know what exactly is that Purple Sky-Fire that you said you can cure us with?"

Bing Xinyue said casually, "You said it was the No. 1 fire that was best to make dan beads. Well, you can fool the little girl Chuchu, but you should stop lying in front of me."

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. What kind of person was Bing Xinyue though?

He had heard Jun Yinglian talking about her more than once even though he had never actually met her.

She was a lady who wanted very little. She seemed to not care about all things. She was smart. There was hardly anything that could escape her sensitive awareness.

If she didn't ask, she just didn't care.

That didn't mean she didn't know anything or didn't understand the truth.

For the current situation, the lie that he had made the last time to escape Wenren Chuchu had apparently touched Bing Xinyue's sensitive mind. It concerned a person that Bing Xinyue cared the most.

That was why she had to figure it all out on this matter.

Facing Bing Xinyue, Ye Xiao was running his brain fast. He was thinking about what to say and how to say to prevaricate in front of her.

Bing Xinyue was not Wenren Chuchu.

Wenren Chuchu might have lots of tricky thoughts in mind, yet she was easy to deal with. As long as he could keep pursuing her weakness, she could be defeated. Even if she turned violent, it wouldn't be a huge loss for Ye Xiao. At least she wouldn't threaten his life. Well, Bing Xinyue... There was very possibly nothing in this world that she didn't know. And if she found out Ye Xiao was lying, she might take his life immediately.

He knew many things that he shouldn't. If he became useless for her, he would die unreasonably!

"The Purple Sky-Fire... I have to say it is real." Ye Xiao said

bitterly, "Surely, it is actually not that magical like I told Chuchu before... However, think about my situation back then. I was captured by your disciple. I just wanted to survive and get away from here. That's why I had to tell her the truth that I could cure the disease that was caused by the martial art of your sect... In fact, I have never wanted to use my martial art on anything..."

Ye Xiao didn't make it very clear with the last sentence. However, Bing Xinyue understood him well.

She sighed and said, "That's true. An innocent man can be accused for only carrying something priceless. If other sects know that you are actually capable of resolving the main problem of the Misty Cloud Palace, I am afraid you, even your whole clan and everybody in your sect, will be in some serious trouble forever... You might all get killed. Even if you are in our hands, we surely won't kill you, but we will very possibly capture you forever!"

Ye Xiao was alarmed immediately. He said, "Don't mistake me. I can only temporarily control the initial problem of your disease. In fact, I have no confidence to handle the situation of some higher levels like yours."

"You do." Bing Xinyue spoke casually, "I have checked on you carefully and made sure you are capable of solving my problem. Otherwise, what makes you think I would talk to you peacefully like this. You have a kind of spiritual qi that is very vigorous. Such vigorous spiritual qi is something I have never seen in any people. The most magical thing is that you actually control both the gelid power and the pure yang power... Ah."

She sighed and said, "When the Misty Cloud Palace was established at the beginning, we had three kinds of martial arts. The most powerful one was the one I am cultivating... However, after a big fight, we lost a part of our martial art."

"You lost some of your basic martial art?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Yes." Bing Xinyue said, "After that, our ancient masters spent a lot of time and energy trying to complete the martial art. And they finally got it done..."

"However, it was still not the original one. From then on, the only flaw in our martial art remained till now..." Her pretty eyes were staring at Ye Xiao. She spoke slowly, "From then, whoever cultivated this martial art would become unbelievably powerful and invincible, but we need the Regeneration Ink Lotus, Regeneration Jade Lotus and the Renaissance Jade Lotus..."

...

Chapter 210: The Doom of the Misty Cloud

"That is the huge flaw of our top martial art! I don't think it is strange to you now, Master Feng.

In fact, that fight was caused by this martial art.

At that time, there were lots of superior cultivators in the Misty Cloud Palace. Our main martial art was powerful, fierce and invincible. Although we were all females, we were very likely going to rule the whole realm. Under such situation, all the other forces sensed the threat. They knew we were most likely the sect that would rule the whole Qing-Yun Realm.

None of them would allow it.

That's why they formed an alliance to fight against the Misty Cloud Palace under the lead of Wu Fa... Tens of thousands of our brave ladies died under their attacks. The seven senior great masters died fighting. The entire Misty Cloud Palace fell apart immediately like a dispersing star cloud... Only those main disciples of our different groups escaped with their own martial arts earlier before they couldn't. They were hiding in some deserted places waiting for the day for them to return."

Maybe Bing Xinyue was tough enough. When she was telling the sad story about her own sect, her face still held that bland kind of expression. It sounded like she was just talking about some normal story. Only the clenched fists of hers showed that she was not that calm as she looked like.

"Wu Fa..." Ye Xiao murmured.

"Yes. Wu Fa. He is the No. 1 superior cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm. His title is The Unruliness." When Bing Xinyue said this name, she showed the extreme hatred in her voice, "He built his own fame in that fight. He became authoritative to others, and he can stand above anyone in that realm..."

Ye Xiao nodded, "I see."

Wu Fa is the "One Person" of the "One Person, Two Temples, Three Palace and Seven Factions" that was mentioned before. Ye Xiao didn't know that it was that fight that made this man become the dominator of the realm.

"There were countless superior cultivators in the Misty Cloud Palace back then. We were strong enough to be over all the other forces. However, after being hunted by the united force of all the other forces, we lost our power. The most serious damage was that our main martial art was broken in that fight... After seven thousand years, the main forces of the Qing-Yun Realm became stable and were kept in a balance. The Misty Cloud Palace seized the chance to return to the Qing-Yun Realm. And now we are one of the most powerful forces in the Qing-Yun Realm.

Yet because of our damaged martial art, we lost the opportunity to become as important as the "Two Temples". Now we are in the third range. Even though we hate them all in the Qing-Yun Realm, we never really dare to do anything against them.

All our people are enduring humiliation in order to keep existing in that realm... People unreasonably keep calling us the "Evil Palace", yet we can only accept it and struggle for living in the Qing-Yun Realm.

The recent three thousand years, we have developed a lot and finally become strong enough to shock the world. We finally rule some places, however, nobody knows how much we have sacrificed for it."

Bing Xinyue watched the cloud in the sky of the night. Her face had an extremely bitter smile.

Ye Xiao took a deep breath out and said, "I see."

He truly didn't know anything about it. In his previous life, he only knew that the Misty Cloud Palace was merely the most famous Evil Palace. He reckoned that all the ladies in the Misty Cloud Palace were mad killers. He had never thought that things were actually like that.

However, Bing Xinyue didn't have to tell Ye Xiao all about the story though.

That was the big secret of a sect. It was merely the first time she met Feng Zhiling, yet she actually told him everything... The most important thing was that she and her disciple were both from the enemy kingdom of Feng Zhiling's.

Ye Xiao was the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, Feng Zhiling. Ling-Bao Hall had announced that they were completely loyal to the Kingdom of Chen earlier. No matter if it was Feng Zhiling or Ye Xiao, she shouldn't be so close to him!

Then why did Bing Xinyue do so?

No matter what, she must not be a careless and naive girl!

Ye Xiao was confused about this.

"My Misty Cloud Palace can still stand as one of the most powerful sects in the Qing-Yun Realm, even though we have lost our basic martial art, because we have the capability. Even though we have a problem in our martial art, we have been studying it for a long time since we hid in the deserted land. We finally figured it out. The Regeneration Jade Lotus can fix us. Different kinds of the Regeneration Lotus can solve our problems in different levels. At the initial stage, we need the Regeneration Ink Lotus. At the middle stage, we need the Regeneration Jade Lotus. As we improved, we will need the Renaissance Jade Lotus... It was difficult to plant the Regeneration Lotus, and it is easy to die, but after thousands of years of study and practice, we can finally handle it. Three years ago, we were suddenly attacked by an unexpected gelid storm..." Bing Xinyue's eyes were full of sadness. She said with a bitter smile, "The forbidden area of our sect, Renaissance Saint Garden, was ruined because of that accident..."

Ye Xiao was enlightened as hsaid, "The Renaissance Saint Garden

must be the place you raised the Regeneration Lotus?"

Bing Xinyue smiled bitterly and said, "Yes, it was. That day, a flying star flew across the sky. The Misty Mountain suddenly fell into the extreme cold current... All the superior cultivators had tried their best, but still couldn't stop the attack of the cold current. After no longer than half a day, tens of thousands of Regeneration Ink Lotus, Regeneration Jade Lotus and Renascence Jade Lotus in the Renascence Saint Garden were all frozen and died in this disaster..."

"At the end, none of those lotus was left for us under the attack of the cold current. We lost them all!"

Bing Xinyue sighed and stopped talking.

"None of them?!" Ye Xiao was shocked.

"What was that cold current? Basically, if it was some normal cold current of the realm, even one Dream Origin Stage cultivator could protect the whole land easily... And you are a Dao Origin Cultivator cultivator... Under the efforts of all the superior cultivators of your sect, how could such a thing happen?" Ye Xiao asked.

"We don't know. When we think about it every now and then, it is still like a nightmare to us... That day when the cold current attacked, the cold qi was enough to freeze the whole world. Most strangely, that cold current just laid impacts on the Misty Mountain and that was all... Thousands of our girls were injured

by that cold current in our sect... Some of them who were seriously injured had been frozen into powders and fell down to the floor like a pile of ice..." Bing Xinyue's eyes were full of fear and sadness.

Ye Xiao was astonished.

...

Chapter 211: The Magical Prediction!

[I truly haven't heard that there was actually such a horrible cold current in the history of the Qing-Yun Realm.

Three years ago? Three years ago, I was enjoying how I could control everything in that realm...

And I actually haven't heard of it.

If it really happened, it must be a shocking news. I should have known if it was real!]

"Within only half a day, our sect suffered a huge loss during the cold current. Many of our senior masters tried everything to figure out what caused that disaster. They discovered that there was a flying star that was very likely the cause. So they gathered eight hundred superior cultivators to move it away forcibly. We eventually did it. However... because of that, 365 of them, who were all Dao Origin Stage cultivators, lost their cultivation capabilities... They became completely useless, and they will never recover!" Bing Xinyue sounded extremely painful when saying that.

Ye Xiao was astonished!

[Oh my bloody god!

Three hundred and sixty-five Dao Origin Stage cultivators lost

their entire cultivation capabilities just to remove the source of the cold current?!!]

If Master Bai heard what she said, he would feel like wiping the whole Misty Cloud Palace out. He was wondering why the Heavenly Mystery was lost so surprisingly... Well, because it was removed by the Misty Cloud Palace. They even sacrificed 365 Dao Origin Stage cultivators to forcibly remove it...

Three years ago, it was the year when Master Bai completed his great plan.

However, Ye Xiao and Bing Xinyue, they both didn't know it. Nobody in the Misty Cloud Palace knew it.

If they knew, they would have wanted to rip Master Bai into pieces even if they might get themselves killed! Because it was him who drew down the Heavenly Mystery and brought a huge disaster to the Misty Cloud Palace! It nearly broke the whole sect down!

Sometimes, things in the world were just that weirdly coincidental...

Sometimes, when you do something, it will lead to some unexpected results... And you might never know about that result...

"Like I said, before that, many generations of our sect have been searching for the Regeneration Lotus in the Qing-Yun Realm in

order to keep our sect live on powerfully... Once we found it, no matter if it was a seedling or a seed, we would bring it back to the Misty Cloud Palace... We have the Renaissance Saint Garden. We could have the biggest chance to successfully raise the Regeneration Lotus in that garden, and we could develop them into higher levels... We had just never thought that..." Bing Xinyue smiled bitterly.

Ye Xiao was enlightened, "So when the accident happened to the Renaissance Saint Garden, it became extremely hard to find even one Regeneration Lotus in the entire Qing-Yun Realm. Right?"

Bing Xinyue sadly nodded, "After that day, the Renaissance Saint Garden was totally ruined! Otherwise, it wouldn't be so hard to find even one seed of the Regeneration Lotus. The problem we are facing is, other than the difficulty to find the Regeneration Lotus, it was even more troublesome to plant and raise it!"

Ye Xiao was silent.

That was something he truly had never thought about.

In order to keep their sect living, they had been collecting all these kinds of lotus back to their place for thousands of years. They had collected almost all the Regeneration Lotus and made it difficult to find one outside their garden... But that accident just ruined everything.

How ironic it was!

It only took an instant to ruin the accomplishment of thousands of generations' work!

"About that accident, although we had faced a huge destructive strike, we never told anybody outside about it. We feared that such news would draw us more disasters. If the other sects knew about it, they would never let us go. While we were keeping the secret, we sent the low-ranked disciples back to their homes..." Bing Xinyue said.

"I see." Ye Xiao finally understood why people like Wenren Chuchu would show up in the Land of Han-Yang.

Basically, Wenren Chuchu should not be qualified enough to get out of the sect and get into the martial world, yet she was out here.

"We have our reason to do so. We didn't want people talk about this accident. We just want to be safe. We hoped that those who were sent back to their places could start to search for the Regeneration Lotus in other places... The destruction of the Renaissance Saint Garden announced that all the peak superior cultivators who cultivated our martial art would fall at any second. It still had hope if we sent everybody away to search the lotus in different places. What happened to Chuchu, was a good fortune of ours..." Bing Xinyue smiled bitterly.

"I understand that. What I don't understand is that why you are telling me all this. It is, after all, a huge secret of your sect that concerns the survival of your sect." Ye Xiao asked confusedly.

"It is simple and easy. Because you have both the Yin and Yang power. You have the thing you said... The Purple Sky-Fire!" Bing Xinyue took a deep breath.

Ye Xiao was completely speechless this time.

He had just casually made something up, yet it had actually led to such a serious situation.

That was just out of his imagination.

Well, it is always better not to make up lies!

"At that time, the 365 Dao Origin Stage cultivators lost all their capabilities, yet good luck is always staying with the misfortunes. They all set their minds into a clear spiritual condition. They sat together and spent all the energy they had left to proceed a prediction for our sect. They had seen a bright road in the future of the Misty Cloud Palace."

Bing Xinyue said, "The result was..."

Her eyes kept staring at Ye Xiao quietly. She didn't even blink.

Ye Xiao felt a bit terrified facing such vigorous eyes.

He felt a bit cold because of fear!

"... 'At the initial time of the universe, the purple qi rises in the east. A Monarch holds his sword with the two extreme elements on his body. He demands the realms and he controls the slaughters in the martial world. It is the renascence of the misty cloud, and it will be shining long in the history'..."

After a pause, Bing Xinyue slowly spoke word-by-word.

[Purple qi? From the east? Two elements? Monarch? His sword?]

Hearing this, Ye Xiao felt himself shaking!

[What the hell... Isn't it frankly bringing me up to the table? In the whole universe, is there really anyone else who fits those lines except me?

That is obviously fooling me to death!]

"Although it was a prediction that had costed the rest of all those 365 cultivators' energy, it was still just a prediction. It takes time to testify it. However, we had no better choice but leave all our hopes on this prediction..."

[You have put all your hopes on this fxcking stupid prediction?]

Ye Xiao felt rather weak on his feet.

Bing Xinyue was staring at him with heat in her eyes. She didn't

even blink!

...

Chapter 212: How Did He Know?

Bing Xinyue said, "Since then, our people had found some Regeneration Lotus here and there, yet they were all Regeneration Ink Lotus. There had never been any Regeneration Jade Lotus nor any Renascence Jade Lotus. Our Renascence Saint Garden had been ruined. We had lost our capability to develop the Regeneration Lotus. However, even though there was only a limited amount of Regeneration Ink Lotus, we still kept saving them for others. We wanted... that those who were more likely to have brighter future and had more potentials to have them. Some of them were rather capable in cultivation, while some of them were powerful enough to protect our sect at that moment. We sacrificed the others to make sure this sect could live on."

"That is the reason... why I don't want to use the Regeneration Ink Lotus..." She sighed, "Nobody wants to die. If I can, I surely won't give up my chance. However... There has to be... someone to carry on the tradition of this sect, which has been running for tens of thousands of years. So... There has to be someone standing forward to set a good example for the young generations... Otherwise, I am afraid this sect will fall apart before that prediction will come true..."

Ye Xiao coughed. He showed a complex expression on his face. [Since when did I actually need to carry such a heavy responsibility on my shoulder?]

So he said, "However... Even though there is a good reason for that, I still think that everything happened too fast. You didn't think that I am the one mentioned in that prediction, did you? I just casually made up something like 'Purple Sky-Fire' thing. I have

the gelid qi and fire qi inside my body though. But that is just too reckless! Don't you think?"

Bing Xinyue smiled and didn't say anything.

In fact, she did feel strange about all this.

Since Ye Xiao spoke the phrase "Misty Cloud Bing Xinyue; Broad Heaven Jun Yin-Lian", Bing Xinyue had felt something was wrong.

For her, a stranger who knew that much about the secret of her sect should be killed right away!

However, she somehow felt that this man was reliable and trustful. She believed that he wouldn't do anything to harm her, Chuchu or her sect.

When this feeling came up in her mind, she questioned herself a lot. She wanted to figure out what this feeling was and why she would feel so.

That was why she hadn't woken Ye Xiao up and just sat by the window thinking, even though Ye Xiao had been lying there for a long time.

There was another thing she couldn't understand yet.

[When Sister Jun asked my opinion about this thing, I was

against it, but it was not because of my pride of being a person from a great sect. I actually just didn't want to protect myself by using her title. And at that time, my sect was in such a dangerous situation. If our secret spread out, our sect would surely come to a second fall. At that time, I just didn't want Sister Jun to fall along with me...

My cultivation ability and my fame were far from being at the same stage with her. I am too far behind her.

That was why I rejected her.

Luckily, she didn't insist. So this thing became out of anybody's mind.

However, I can be sure... In the entire Qing-Yun Realm, there should only be very few people who know this. In fact, it is not only less than five.

In fact... it should only be three!

There are only three people who know about it!

The Xiao Monarch, Jun Yinglian and me.

At that time, that Xiao Monarch was Sister Jun's lover. I have been hating him for so many years! That bastard!

He was the one who ruined my sister's life!

I didn't know whether it was because I cursed him too much and it came true or what. After three years, everybody suddenly said that he was hunted and died leaving nothing behind. Not even a piece of his soul.]

When she got the news about the Xiao Monarch's death that day, she was so shocked that she felt like passing out, because she knew very clearly how much her beloved sister loved that man. It must be a fatal strike to Jun Yinglian to hear about the Xiao Monarch's death!

So after she made sure the news was true, she went to Jun Yinglian without any hesitation. When she arrived, she found Jun Yinglian had been like a dead person because of sadness.

Jun Yinglian was so pallid that Bing Xinyue nearly couldn't recognize her...

After staying with Jun Yinglian for half a month, she successfully made her feel a little better. She had never stopped pushing Jun Yinglian to hate all those killers so that she could have a goal to live on...

After that, she left the Qing-Yun Realm for the Land of Han-Yang.

At the beginning, she just wanted to live and die alone in this

realm with her closest disciple. That was how she wanted to spend the rest of her life. In fact, she also didn't want Jun Yinglian to know that she died if she did. She wanted her beloved sister to live happier.

Yet she never expected that she could actually meet the guy in the prediction of her sect!

However, this guy was truly weak. That was so surprising to her.

He was so weak that even an ant might be stronger than him. That was what she thought!

[But... how did he get to know the two phrases after all?

There should be only three people who know that. One is dead. As I know, Sister Jun would never tell anybody else about this.

So it is impossible that either of them let it out. It can't be myself for sure. Then... Why does this Feng Zhiling... know about it?

It is so weird!

It is actually hard to believe and impossible to explain!]

Bing Xinyue was lost in thought and confusion.

Ye Xiao was also silent at the moment.

He seemed to have a lot of questions too.

However, he didn't dare to ask, because he didn't know how to.

Because he wasn't prepared to face the answers yet.

They just stayed silent for a long time.

Yet none of them left.

Everything became so weird when nobody talked in the room.

"Master Feng..."

After being quiet for a long while, Bing Xinyue opened her mouth first and said, "Can I have a look at the Regeneration Jade Lotus that you have successfully developed?"

...

Chapter 213: The Regeneration Jade Lotus

Ye Xiao was also lost in thoughts when he heard Bing Xinyue. It took him a while to get back to his mind before he said, "In fact it belongs to you. So of course you can. I will give it back to you."

And then he flipped his hand and a crystal white lotus appeared. The stem of the lotus was still black, yet the flower was already snow white.

It looked like it would never get stained.

Even the stamen was white.

"It turns out to be such a high-quality Regeneration Jade Lotus. That is so unbelievable..." Bing Xinyue's eyes lit up and she hurriedly stood up. She walked close to Ye Xiao staring at the lotus obsessively. She couldn't even contain the excitement inside her heart.

"When Chuchu got this Regeneration Ink Lotus, she told me that... she had carved two words on the stem by using the special method of our sect..."

Ye Xiao was stunned and said, "Two words? How come I never know it?"

Bing Xinyue smiled and reached her hand to the stem of that Regeneration Jade Lotus. While doing that, her hand emitted a

stream of energy that had a sense of cold power. She poured it to the stem, and after a while, two words appeared on it.

"Chuchu."

"It is that Regeneration Ink Lotus that she gave you!" Bing Xinyue took a breath of relief. She closed her eyes and two lines of tears were going down along her cheeks from her eyes. She said, "My master... She finally has hope..."

Ye Xiao was a bit annoyed hearing about it though. [What the hell is she talking about? Who the hell does she think she is! Would I even think about replacing their stupid Regeneration Ink Lotus with a Regeneration Jade Lotus?!]

When he saw Bing Xinyue weep, he was, however, moved by the true emotions between them. He sighed.

The Misty Cloud Palace truly had a tough time. What those people did deserved everybody's respect.

They would actually rather die to keep the others alive.

No matter if they were doing it for their masters or disciples, they still gave their lives out anyway.

Every single person in their sect did this...

He thought that there might be less men who could do what they were doing.

Such ladies were truly heroic and admiring. The truth was that all their people followed the same rule doing it. How admirable!

"Master Feng, from the moment you started to develop the Regeneration Ink Lotus till it became the Regeneration Jade Lotus, it has only been about a month. Is it right?" Bing Xinyue looked at Ye Xiao with shiny eyes.

"Yes, it is indeed..." Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "I, Feng, always value promises the most. Since I had promised, I naturally would try my best to keep it. I know that it is the only thing that can save your lives. So surely, I should do my best on it. Although it was just one Regeneration Ink Lotus, I have spent all my precious resources on it. I made it eventually, yet it truly had costed me way too much."

He sighed, "Well luckily, that Regeneration Ink Lotus was quite close to upgrading. It only needed one tiny step. Otherwise, I wouldn't have done it."

"Resources? Too much? How come?" Bing Xinyue asked.

"The resources I was talking included a massive amount of spiritual jades and many other treasures... And there were some special minerals too. I used all these materials to set a special array that could absorb spiritual energies. I also poured some Rootless Spring Water under the lotus and put it right at the confluence of

all the spiritual energy streams in the world..."

Ye Xiao continued, "Well, even though I have done whatever I can and spent everything I have, I still couldn't make the entire lotus turn into white color. It should be a failure. I feel ashamed that I couldn't have a perfect outcome."

Bing Xinyue smiled softly and said, "Master Feng, you are being too humble on this. It is already extremely fast. I am already shocked by seeing such a result. Maybe you don't understand the true problem in this thing. In fact, even if the Regeneration Saint Garden still exists in a good condition, it will still take us fifty years to develop a Regeneration Ink Lotus into a Regeneration Jade Lotus."

She smiled bitterly and continued, "To develop the Regeneration Jade Lotus into a Renascence Jade Lotus, it will take us five hundred years. And you, you actually just spent a month to turn a Regeneration Ink Lotus into a high-quality Regeneration Jade Lotus. I think as long as we do it right, it will just take us a short period of time to turn it into a Renascence Jade Lotus. If you really feel ashamed about it, we, the Misty Cloud Palace, which has been studying it for generations after generations, should be much more ashamed than you!"

"Fifty years? Five hundred?" Ye Xiao was shocked.

He felt regret inside his mind.

[Oh... It turns out I still have made it too short... I should have

said something much longer than one month.

I am not trying to ask for more praise or reward. In fact, I just don't want to be captured and become their lotus developing specialist...

That sucks!]

In fact, even if he wanted to say a longer time than one month, he couldn't! It had only been more than a month since he left Wenren Chuchu the last time. No matter what he wanted to make up, he couldn't make the time longer than one month!

"I wonder... How long would it take if Master Feng begin to work on developing this Regeneration Jade Lotus into a Renaissance Jade Lotus?" Bing Xinyue asked with expectations.

"There are not enough materials for me to get to it though." Ye Xiao smiled and said.

"Not enough materials..." Bing Xinyue murmured and asked, "What you said about lacking materials, you mean in the Land of Han-Yang, right? It doesn't include our materials, right? That means the Land of Han-Yang doesn't have enough materials for you to do it. However, we may have enough materials for you to do it, right?"

"That's right." Ye Xiao nodded.

"What if we have enough materials?" Bing Xinyue kept asking.

"If we have enough materials... If there will be no accident..." Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "It will take me three to five years to develop a lotus about this size!"

"Three to five years..." Bing Xinyue's face turned dark as she spoke loudly.

"Hmm. Three to five years are necessary. This Regeneration Jade Lotus has been developed by me. Although it is already high quality, it still needs more careful development to become totally white. To upgrade into a Renaissance Jade Lotus, it will never succeed without three to five years time!" Ye Xiao said in a deep voice.

"No... No... Master, you didn't understand me. What I meant was... You actually just need three to five years to do it? It is actually just such a short time?" Bing Xinyue said with an embarrassed bearings.

[Fxck it! Did I make it too short again?] Ye Xiao thought, and then he said, "What I said is specially about this very Regeneration Jade Lotus though. As long as there are enough materials, it can become a Renaissance Jade Lotus for sure! As for the other lotuses, that will be a different thing."

"What do you mean?"

Chapter 214: Such a Big Mistake!

"As you can see, I have spent a lot to forcibly develop this Regeneration Jade Lotus. During the process, I have used a secret treasure of my sect. That's why I could make it within such a short time, and it could have such high quality. As long as the materials are good enough, I do have the confidence to develop it into the Renaissance Jade Lotus. However, the way I developed it is a one-off method. It is unrepeatable. It can only be used once!"

No matter what, Ye Xiao still tried to make the time longer, because he felt it was too dangerous...

By any possibility, if he was captured to take care of the medical matters, the rest of his life would be most likely ruined.

"Hmm? Do you mean you cannot develop any more Regeneration Ink Lotus?"

"Well, not exactly. Just that it will take me a longer time to do it. The next time if I want to develop a Regeneration Ink Lotus into another Regeneration Jade Lotus, it may take me three to five years. If I want to make it turn into a Renaissance Jade Lotus, it will probably take me three hundred to five hundred years. Well, I can just say that it doesn't really seem that good compared to the developing method that your sect uses..."

"Three hundred to five hundred years..." Bing Xinyue frowned and said, "Hmm. Can I understand it like this? From three hundred years to five hundred years, if we still have plenty of materials it

needs and we just keep spending whatever we have, we can get it done in three hundred years. Right?"

Ye Xiao looked at her with praise and said, "That's right."

Bing Xinyue frowned and thought for a long while, before she spoke again, "If so, apart from this Regeneration Jade Lotus we already have, it is still more than enough for us..."

When she was saying this, at first, she was still frowning, and then she looked obviously relieved. She was actually speaking with relief.

"Other than that, if I have a Renascence Jade Lotus and plenty of materials like we said, I can spend five thousand years to develop it into a spiritual object which only exists in the myth."

Ye Xiao said with a deep voice, "That is... the Great Heavens Golden Lotus."

"Great Heavens Golden Lotus!" Bing Xinyue immediately stood up, "You can make it a Great Heavens Golden Lotus? Are you really that confident about it?"

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Surely I can't be confident about it if I work on it myself. You heard me. I said it should be like what we talked about. There should be plenty of resources and we have to keep spending whatever we have on it. To make a Great Heavens Golden Lotus... I believe it is just a matter of time."

Bing Xinyue's charming body shook. Her pale cheeks were suddenly covered by two small pieces of red. She started to breathe rapidly.

The Great Heavens Golden Lotus was one of the nine legendary Grand Spiritual Objects that only existed in the myth.

It was the necessary thing for the people in her sect who wanted to reach the peak of their cultivation!

In fact, it was the thing that could allow them get rid of the limits of life and death, and make them get to the clinking path to the grand success!

Such a thing had only existed in the myth. Nobody had ever really seen it.

Not even the people in the history who had built their sect. They had only contacted with some rather high-quality Renaissance Jade Lotus, yet never had seen any Great Heavens Golden Lotus in their lives. However, at this day, in such a low-class realm - Land of Han-Yang, it was spoken by Feng Zhiling with a casual tone.

"May I ask what resources you need during the development process?" Bing Xinyue asked with short breaths.

"I know you must feel weird about it. The more I say, the more dangerous the situation will be for me. I am surprised too. I really

am. Why don't you attack me and capture me? I am the guy who can control the future of your sect." Ye Xiao looked at her and said gently, "In fact, the reason why I keep talking so much is simple. If you don't take the Regeneration Jade Lotus, you will have only half a year to live."

"It will be such a shame that a pretty lady will die in half a year." Ye Xiao was being frank, "I don't want you to die. If you die, someone will be in deep sorrow. To keep you alive, I can only give you the hope and motivation to live. What I said is all that I used to give you the hope and the motivation!"

Bing Xinyue was stunned, and then she blushed.

"You... What do you mean by saying such words? It has nothing to do with you whether I am dead or alive!" Bing Xinyue showed him a cold face. She looked at Ye Xiao with a bit of anger and said slowly, "Master Feng, please have some dignity!"

Ye Xiao was astonished.

He was so speechless with his head full of black lines.

Obviously, Bing Xinyue had misunderstood him.

[Oh my fxcking god! That is a huge mistake!

I am not doing it for you! I just don't want my Lian-Lian to be upset again. I don't want her best friend die. That is all! Nothing

else!

What the heck are you thinking?]

In fact, it wasn't Bing Xinyue's fault that she misunderstood him this time.

It was just because he was so dumb on things between men and women!

He was just so...

A girl, who was so pretty and so elegant, single and in a perfect age, heard a guy talking to her sentimentally, "I don't want you to die. If you die, someone will be in deep sorrow".

That seemed to mean "I don't want you to die and I rather put myself into great dangers to give you hope to live on"...

The words "if you die, someone will be in deep sorrow" seemed to be perfectly true for Ye Xiao.

Because he thought that Jun Yinglian would be extremely upset if she died.

[How can I let my Lian-Lian feel upset with such deep sorrow! How can that happen!]

However, it just didn't sound like that in Bing Xinyue's mind.

[What do you mean someone will be in deep sorrow if I die? What do you mean? Who will be upset?

I am going to die in the Land of Han-Yang. There is only one person who knows me and it is my disciple. Of course she will be sad, but... Feng Zhiling just said 'someone'.

If he meant Chuchu, he would probably say 'Chuchu will be in deep sorrow'.

I don't think he needs to avoid mentioning Chuchu.]

This "someone" was truly so meaningful after all...

"I didn't mean that! Don't misunderstand! You are truly mistaking me!" Ye Xiao spoke with his eyes widely opened.

"Heh, heh. I know what I heard. I will know if I mistake anything. You yourself know well what exactly you meant!" Bing Xinyue smiled coldly and handed over the Regeneration Jade Lotus, "Thank you all the same though, Master Feng. Problems about the Regeneration Jade Lotus will be in your hands. Please, try your best."

"Our sect will offer whatever you need on developing the Regeneration Ink Lotus and Regeneration Jade Lotus. No matter what you need, you don't need to worry. Besides, we will never

mistreat you, Master Feng. As for those overladen thoughts in your mind, you should better stop having it..." Bing Xinyue spoke blandly.

Ye Xiao was totally speechless at the moment.

That was such a big mistake!

...

Chapter 215: Ye Xiao Burst

"As for my own life and death... I know what I am doing. Don't you worry about it that much." Bing Xinyue spoke and stood up.

Ye Xiao watched her walking out. He was extremely astonished.

He actually couldn't say a word to stop her.

At the moment, a white figure flashed at the door. A slim figure stopped Bing Xinyue, "Master, please don't go!"

It was exactly Wenren Chuchu.

Bing Xinyue spoke with a dark face, "Get away. Why are you still tugging back and forth like this? You are a grown up lady. How is this dignified?"

Wenren Chuchu held her waist and spoke with tears, "I am not letting you go! Master, I have grown up in a Royal Family. Even my mother hasn't treated me as well as you do... If you give up this chance to live, I... I will die with you!"

Bing Xinyue sighed and said, "Silly girl. There is... only one Regeneration Jade Lotus."

"Even though there is only one Regeneration Jade Lotus, it should be yours!" Wenren Chuchu spoke stubbornly, "If not for

you, why would I spend that much effort to find the Regeneration Ink Lotus... Now that I have it and it has become the Regeneration Jade Lotus. That is the blessing from gods. The gods want you to take it, Master! If you want me to give it to someone else, I just can't be that generous."

Bing Xinyue's face turned dark and she said, "Chuchu, we are people of the Misty Cloud Palace. From now on, you have to learn to be generous like this!"

She sighed and said, "Women in the worlds are in such low positions. The Misty Cloud Palace has granted us the possibility to rule the world and look down upon all the realms... If we don't have the sect, we must be merely in a state of disunity. As long as the sect is still there, we will be treated honorably. That is a glory of ours.

We need to protect the glory!

Even if we need to die for it, we should do it! It is worthwhile!"

She continued, "With my capability, I am only in the middle of the ranking in the Qing-Yun Realm. I am not strong enough to protect our sect and keep it running. I can't make our sect shocking in the entire Qing-Yun Realm... That is why it will be of limited use if I take the Regeneration Jade Lotus. Chuchu, you must understand this."

Wenren Chuchu burst into tears, "No! I don't care! I want you to live!"

Bing Xinyue sighed and didn't know what to say next.

"Hmm..." Suddenly Wenren Chuchu wiped the tears and blinked. She said, "Right! There is this guy Feng Zhiling... His Purple Sky-Fire can burn the disease that was created by our martial art. I tried it before. It really worked well. Master, you..."

Bing Xinyue humphed and said, "Never ever mention that again."

Wenren Chuchu held her tight and didn't let go, "Master, please just listen to me once."

Bing Xinyue eventually got mad and she said, "Let go!"

At this moment, Ye Xiao finally said something. He said, "Lady Bing."

Bing Xinyue answered coldly, "What?"

"I know that you ladies in the Misty Cloud Palace see virginity as an extremely important thing and you are strongly against marriage." He spoke slowly, "However, compared to life, I think that life is always the more important one. After all, one can only talk about future and all other things when he or she is alive. Once he or she is dead, everything that might happen will be gone."

"Most importantly..." He didn't let Bing Xinyue argue and he said,

"I can make Regeneration Jade Lotus, and naturally, I can make Regeneration Ink Lotus too... Maybe you are too troubled at the moment so you haven't noticed that this Regeneration Jade Lotus doesn't have any seeds! You people are specialists on raising Regeneration Lotus. You must know that the Regeneration Ink Lotus becomes Regeneration Jade Lotus. After the Regeneration Ink Lotus is withered, it will bloom again. Only when it blooms again can it transform into a Regeneration Jade Lotus after being changed on its structure with some special materials... Am I right?"

Bing Xinyue was enlightened. She turned around and said, "Of course I know that. The seeds of the Regeneration Ink Lotus usually grow within a second and then fall to the floor in an instant. They will melt once they touch the floor. It is extremely difficult to collect them... You... Did you actually collect them successfully?"

Ye Xiao nodded and reached out his hand. Over a dozen black seeds showed up in his hands. They were like black pearls rolling in his hands.

Bing Xinyue stared at Ye Xiao. The expressions in her eyes kept changing fast. They were full of fierceness. That was no doubt. The black seeds on Ye Xiao's hands had an extreme attraction to her!

She knew what those seeds meant to her.

She knew what those seeds meant to her sect too!

No matter what, she had to get them!

And she knew this Feng Zhiling was a very capable man! She had to draw him over to her side. She had never seen anybody who could control the future of a super great sect on his own except for Feng Zhiling!

She took in a deep breath, and there were some sadness and decisiveness on her pretty face. She spoke slowly, "Is this your bargaining chip, Master Feng?"

Ye Xiao was shocked, "Bargaining chip? What do you mean?"

"Don't you just want... me..." Bing Xinyue blushed as she turned rather furious. She said, "You want to exchange for my virginity with the seeds? You know I can't say no to what you are offering. That is why you want me to say it myself so badly. It makes you feel much more successful, right?!"

Ye Xiao felt like his brain was in knots. He kept his eyes and mouth wide opened. He couldn't think of anything to say and stayed quiet for a long time.

[Oh my bloody god! What is the problem?

What is the logic inside this lady's brain?

How can she connect two totally different things together and talk like she knows everything? And she made it sound like it was

real!]

"Master Feng, you truly have profound eyes. Your offering is truly deadly attractive to me. Bing Xinyue cannot resist it. As you wish then, I say yes to you." Bing Xinyue spoke coldly.

Ye Xiao burst eventually!

[What the hell is this?

What did I say?

I didn't say anything, did I?!!

And you actually said this kind of words?!

Do you want me to kill myself?]

"Wait! Wait! I have to make a few things clear to you. First of all, I never promised to serve your sect. The deal between your disciple and I is sealed. It is over. Second, I feel sorry about what you encountered, but I never said that I had to save you. Even though you are pitying yourself, you should keep it under a reasonable line. Third, I am not that kind of dirty man that will trade sex with some things. And last..."

Ye Xiao spoke coldly, "Please get out! Immediately! Now!"

Bing Xinyue completely blushed.

After hearing what Ye Xiao said, how could she not know that she had misunderstood him?

She suddenly felt extremely ashamed.

[He is so kind and keeps trying to get me cured, yet I actually mistook him with some kind of dirty man!]

...

Chapter 216: The Ling Xiao Ice Art

She started to think about what she had just said...

[Oh my god! What was in my mind! How could I be so sure that he was that kind of 'complex' person...

No wonder he is so angry about it. Anybody will be pissed for being mistaken like this!

He was just being kind to me, yet I actually made a mistake...]

Looking at Feng Zhiling who had fierce expression, Bing Xinyue felt warm in her heart. She said with regret, "Well... Please don't be mad, Master Feng. I was being narrow-minded. I made a wrong judgement on your personality. It is just because I care about something too much. Please forgive me..."

She was so regretful. She lowered her head and walked out with a blushed face. She was like a little girl who had done something wrong.

On the other side, Wenren Chuchu finally figured out why her master and Feng Zhiling had a quarrel. She couldn't help smiling. She didn't stop Bing Xinyue this time.

About dealing with the worldly wisdom, Wenren Chuchu, the disciple, could be more than good enough to be Bing Xinyue's master's master!

She had been nervous thinking about how Feng Zhiling was attracted by her master's pretty appearance... She had actually nearly mistaken all this.

She turned around and talked to Ye Xiao, "Brother Feng, isn't there anything else that can cure my master?"

She suddenly changed the topic to avoid the embarrassing displeasure caused by the conversation they just had. As Bing Xinyue's disciple, she had all rights to show her concern to her own master, even though it was in an inappropriate situation. No matter how angry Ye Xiao was at the moment, he had to show her some respect.

As expected, Ye Xiao responded immediately, "The two options are the only methods I know at the moment. I can't think of anything else."

And then he raised his head up and prepared to continue talking. Suddenly, he shouted like he saw some horrible ghost, "Ahh!"

He shouted because there was a pretty girl standing in front of him. Her eyebrows were like drawings; her hair was long and floating; her body was slim and nice. Although she was just standing in front of him, he felt that she was flying behind a thin mist, so unattainable.

Tall and small body with a perfect shape; pale and exquisite skin; pretty eyes that were soft like water.

"Who... who are you?" Ye Xiao was so shocked as he asked.

It wouldn't be appropriate to describe this girl in front of him with usual words, because she would even be the most beautiful girl in any of the upper realms!

She was a beauty that should only exist upon the sky and couldn't be found in the mortal world!

Ye Xiao had thought that Su Yeyue must be the prettiest girl in the Land of Han-Yang. However, he had never thought that there was actually another girl who was also beautiful like the heavens! She wasn't below Su Yeyue in appearance at all. In fact, she was even a bit more beautiful than Su Yeyue. Although Su Yeyue was gorgeous, she was still too young and ignorant. The girl in front of him was more gorgeous in a mature way.

She surely was so beautiful that a whole kingdom might fall for her. She seemed to have no flaws at all.

"Who am I? I am who I am." Wenren Chuchu was satisfied with this scene that she intentionally made, because she had been annoyed that Feng Zhiling kept calling her ugly.

Even though she had told him that it wasn't her true appearance, he still insisted!

No matter what, as long as he didn't know her true appearance,

what she said would have no persuading power. So she had to let him say whatever he wanted!

However, as for now...

[Humph! I am going to show you what is the real beauty in the world!

Once I show my beauty to you, you, who have never met any real beautiful girls, will surely be shocked like hell!]

Now that her wish had been accomplished, although he didn't seem to be as shocked like she expected, he at least showed his astonishment. She suddenly felt so good and smiled at him. She turned around a circle in front of Ye Xiao and said asquint, "What? Am I beautiful or not?"

"Very ugly." Ye Xiao obviously didn't want to let her feel complacent, so he said against his conscience, "And you are really too fat! You have nothing to do with the word 'beautiful', girl! You are desecrating this wonderful word! It is not your fault being ugly, but asking people whether you are beautiful or not... That was cheeky and... It is just so..."

"You!" Wenren Chuchu bursted in anger and jumped over to seize his throat.

[This guy really needs to be beaten up hard! I let you say whatever you want because I had no proof to support my point.

Now that the evidence is right in front of you, yet you actually talked some bullshxt against your conscience! That is so unbearable! I can't bear it anymore!]

Ye Xiao stopped her hurriedly, "Wait! Do you want me to solve your cultivation problems or not? I am surely unable to defeat you in a fight, but if you dare to touch me now, I swear to god I will never ever make any Regeneration Lotus for you! I will not resolve the problems of yours! If you dare to hit me, I will not defend! You can do whatever you want!"

Wenren Chuchu suddenly loosened her grasp. It turned out she had to bear it even though she couldn't. Ye Xiao had a trump card in hand, so she could only speak with anger, "Brother Feng, you are being so churlish threatening me like this! Why are you doing this."

Ye Xiao humphed, "Whatever I want. It is always better not to be beaten up like a sandbag than being a gentleman. I am quite clear about which one is more important. Are you clear though, Lady Chuchu?"

Wenren Chuchu was more pissed. And then she seemed to think of something else. She just sighed and stayed silent.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Fine. Let's just let it go. I am a generous man. I won't tease you on this. By the way, in what level are you cultivating the martial art, Ling Xiao Ice Art?"

Ling Xiao Ice Art!

The four words had shocked Wenren Chuchu. Even Bing Xinyue who was listening to them while she was outside the room was shocked.

That was exactly the name of the prime martial art of the Misty Cloud Palace!

That was what Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue were cultivating. In other words, it was the great martial art that made them need the Regeneration Lotus!

Although Bing Xinyue had told Ye Xiao something about her sect and the martial art, she had never spoken the name of it.

However, this man, Feng Zhiling, casually actually spoke it out. That meant he must know quite a lot about their sect.

"Mortal Grade; Level Seven." Wenren Chuchu thought for a while and still told him the truth.

"Oh. Level Seven of the Mortal Grade..." Ye Xiao nodded, "That is fast... However, when you upgrade to the Earth Grade, it will be much slower. And when you get to the Sky Grade, it will become much much slower..."

Wenren Chuchu was surprised and she said, "How do you know?"

"Of course I do." Ye Xiao showed a meaningful smile.

In fact, those were all Ye Xiao knew about their sect. The Misty Cloud Palace had always been mysterious in the Qing-Yun Realm. There were only a few among the top superior cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm who could get to know well about it. How could Ye Xiao know?

The Xiao Monarch was powerful and standing upon the whole Qing-Yun Realm, yet he still had no powerful background and strong bases. He was a self-governed cultivator. He shouldn't have been able to know the secrets of those great sects.

...

Chapter 217: Selfish?

Such information always needed dozens of generations' hard work for a sect to collect... How could Ye Xiao have such a powerful background?

He knew the cultivation information about Wenren Chuchu like this. That meant he was truly profound and knowledgeable.

"How many people of your kind are there?" Ye Xiao asked, "I mean... As for now, how many people are still cultivating the Ling Xiao Ice Art?"

Wenren Chuchu showed a bitter smile and said, "We used to have over three thousand people cultivating the Ling Xiao Ice Art. After that disaster, we are the group that suffered the most. About seven hundred of our people died because of it. Over two hundred of our grand masters died against that flying star from outer space... Some of them were damaged and lost their cultivation capabilities, while the others are weak, just like me..."

Her eyes were full of sorrow, "After the disaster, we confirmed that our Renaissance Saint Garden was ruined. There is no way we can recover it. Almost eighty percent of our people had to give up their cultivation and start another martial art from the other groups... As for now, we have only less than fifty people. We still insist in cultivating the Ling Xiao Ice Art. Among us, there are some senior grand masters and some elder prime grand masters. They couldn't cultivate the martial art any further, so they were just trying to stay alive. Within a long time after now, we still need them to protect our sect..."

Ye Xiao was shocked, "Less than fifty..."

Wenren Chuchu sighed sadly, "Without the Regeneration Lotus, to cultivate the Ling Xiao Ice Art is akin to asking for death... If we cannot find more Regeneration Lotus, I am afraid even I have to change my martial art. It is just... We don't want to. We really don't want to give it up..."

"We are not reconciled to it, because if nobody in the Misty Cloud Palace cultivates the Ling Xiao Ice Art, in the near future, when the old grand masters die, our sect will become some second-ranged sect from one of the most powerful sects in the Qing-Yun Realm... At that time, it will be the real fatal disaster of our sect."

She spoke sadly, "When that day comes, I am afraid our sect will be uprooted."

Ye Xiao frowned and said, "It surely will come to that day."

Referring to the history of the Qing-Yun Realm, the collapse of a sect always started when it begins to turn weaker. Once the other sects had the confidence to uproot this sect, even the allies of this sect would lay their hands to it without hesitation.

Since it was doomed to collapse, the abundant resources of this sect would surely become the meal in the other sects' plates.

Whoever seized more, would be more possible to improve

further.

Nobody would let such a chance go.

Morality, justice, virtue... These always meant nothing to them when there were profits in front of them.

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "If everyone of you is just like your master, so elegant and noble-minded that she only thinks about sacrificing for others, how many people can you afford to sacrifice?"

Such words had made Bing Xinyue's body shook.

"But if we are not like that, what else can we do to save our sect? Things are real bad for us." Wenren Chuchu was aggrieved and she argued.

She didn't agree with her master when her master wanted to sacrifice herself, yet when Ye Xiao denied the way their sect do, which meant everybody sacrificing themselves, she actually tried to argue.

"The best way is to let everybody do what they can. Everybody wants to live, so just let them use their own methods to fight for their own lives." Ye Xiao spoke ruthlessly, "The rise of a great sect never depends on its people's sacrifice. It needs everybody to try their best to become stronger themselves."

"As you said, things are so bad for you at the moment. Why don't you let go and try something you never dared to do?" Ye Xiao said, "It is a noble thing to give up one's own life for others. That is true. However, no matter who sacrifices, your sect loses a piece of strength. That is also the truth.

You keep sacrificing people one after another. When there is only one person left, who should she sacrifice for then?

Now I am capable of developing some Regeneration Ink Lotus. Even though I am weak in cultivation, if we start to work together, with the support from your sect and my special method, I will totally be able to supply enough lotus for you. At least I can keep things stable for you within a short period of time.

When I become stronger, I can start to work on the Regeneration Jade Lotus and even the Renaissance Jade Lotus... Even the Heavens Golden Lotus... It is just a matter of time. It is never just a dream...

Before you will meet some main problem when you break through some important level, I can still take care of you with my own cultivation capability. I can free you from having your Jing and Mai frozen. So we can totally be patient and wait. You don't need to give up cultivation at all. You can just go on with your regular pace. You should do whatever you are supposed to do.

If under such situation, some of you still wants to sacrifice only for being noble-minded, that is so stupid."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "For me, such people are not only stupid, but also good to die sooner."

Wenren Chuchu was shocked, but she understood it immediately. [Feng Zhiling said so because he wanted to give my master a motivation to live on.] So she said, "Well, Brother Feng, there may be something you don't know... The martial arts of our sect, especially this Ling Xiao Ice Art, require the cultivators to be totally clean and pure both physically and mentally.

If she has lost her virginity or she has been shaken of her belief on this, she will never improve anymore..."

"That is just bullshxt." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Such taboo was simply made by those old and ugly women of your sect who held prejudice for men. When they became strong enough, they just looked down upon all the guys in the world. That is why they forbid their disciples to live with a man. That is just ridiculous."

He rushed and said, "Even if it is indeed the special requirement of your martial art, I am just trying to operate my martial art to work on your body so that the disease can be removed. How is that related to 'losing virginity'? Will you be pregnant just because a man's power has run inside your Jing and Mai? And you will lose your virginity for it? What a joke! As for 'shaking the belief', that is more of a joke. As long as the two of us both keep our minds clean and pure and we just concentrate on dealing with the disease, why will you 'shake your belief'?

Your sect has fallen to such a miserable state and there is a chance right here that can make your sect live on for thousands of

decades, yet in your heart, it is actually far less important than your so-called virginity and your insistence..."

...

Chapter 218: Why Should We Have a Demeanor

Ye Xiao said coldly, "I really don't understand... Is it noble-minded or just stupid. Or maybe it is just angling for praise and being selfish."

Wenren Chuchu frowned and said, "What you said seems to be reasonable, but it is far too extreme. Sometimes, men can never understand the pride of ladies."

Ye Xiao sneered, "I don't understand. Do you think that the ladies can get to understand the pride of men like us? Do you think all men would have dirty thoughts to you just because you look pretty? Because you look pretty, so every man will want to lay his hand on you?"

He was speaking so frankly that Wenren Chuchu blushed. She lowered her head and said, "Isn't it true?"

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "Hell no!"

"There are definitely more good men than good women in the world." He spoke blandly.

Wenren Chuchu was disdainful. Apparently, she couldn't disagree more. She didn't argue because she didn't want to make Ye Xiao angry.

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "All men like beauties. When we see beautiful girls, we will be shocked and we will want to have them. It is normal. But if you don't want to be with us, what do you think we would dare to do? To be frank, all women are just the same to us. We can have all kinds of girls in a brothel, can't we?"

Wenren Chuchu said furiously, "Brother Feng, I think you are going way too far this time."

Ye Xiao said, "How come? You keep yourselves virgins. That's fine. But do you want all men to be single all our lives? When we go to the brothel and cover the faces of those girls, what is the difference?"

Wenren Chuchu blushed. Although she knew that Ye Xiao was trying to comfort her master, she got really angry. Her pretty face turned cold and she said, "Feng Zhiling, you should mind your language. If you keep speaking such scampish words, it will only damage your reputation."

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "Do I even have any positive images in your minds at all? Why deceive yourselves. At the very least, even if you have that special feeling to me, I never have the same feeling to you. Not to mention seizing you and marrying you, I don't even want you to be my concubine. Since I don't want anything from you and you are the one who is asking me for a favor, why should I be careful with my language?"

"You... Even though you have no special feelings in this case, shouldn't you act like a gentleman in front of a lady, especially in front of a beautiful lady?" Wenren Chuchu asked bitingly.

Ye Xiao's words had truly annoyed her.

"That is ridiculous." Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Don't you understand my words? Why should men be gentle to women? Not to mention to women they don't love. How is this reasonable? A man's demeanor should be always the same. A man should never act differently towards different people.

Why do you want us to act especially gentle in front of women? May I ask, when a man acts gentle in front of you, will you marry him? No? That's right. When a man acts like a gentleman in front of you, it only feeds your vain pride. 'Oh look how these men care about me'."

Ye Xiao bitingly said, "In fact, the men who intentionally act like they are well-educated, experienced and all those charming personalities are the ones who truly have bad intentions to you. That is the only thing they can do to cover their possessive nature."

"It is right, isn't it? You know it." Ye Xiao sneered, "However, the most ridiculous thing is that you ladies are truly fond of these kinds. When you see hypocrites, you actually think they are good... When you actually see someone who dares to show their true personality to you, you think he is ridiculous and rude. Well then, who is the ridiculous one? Hahahahaha..."

At this moment, Wenren Chuchu was shocked again. She stayed silent.

What Ye Xiao said was biting, and it was even rude.

However, he was just telling the truth.

When a man wants nothing from you, he will act freely in front of you. That is the true face of him. If he really fell in love with a woman, he would try everything he could to show some good sides of him to attract the lady's attention.

In fact, it is a rule that works on both sides, men and women.

Ye Xiao found that Wenren Chuchu became silent, he said blandly, "Now you have known my true identity. I don't think it will be difficult to find me. I am leaving then. If you need anything, you can come to Ling-Bao Hall. That is convenient."

And then he just stood up and left.

Wenren Chuchu just sighed and didn't stop him.

In that sigh, there were a sense of sorrow and a sense of disappointment.

Ye Xiao pushed the door and left the room.

Under the flower tree in the yard, Bing Xinyue, who was wearing all white, stood still with blank thoughts. She seemed to be thinking about something.

Ye Xiao just ignored her.

[I am done talking.

Die or live, it is your choice. I don't want Jun Yinglian to be sad. That is true. But you just keep going down to the path of dead even when I have given you the bright path. You just won't take the chance to live. Well, I can't help you with that.

I can't just capture you and remove the disease inside you forcibly, can I?

Well, I am not capable of doing so though. But even if I can, I won't.

I am better than that.]

Looking at Ye Xiao walk out casually and leisurely, the expression in Bing Xinyue's eyes turned complex. It seemed she wanted to stop Ye Xiao, but she just opened her mouth and said nothing.

She stepped forward and wanted to stop him, but she just couldn't do it.

Ye Xiao was walking fast. After a while, he had disappeared in the front door.

The yard became silent again.

After a while, there sounded footsteps. Wenren Chuchu was coming out slowly from inside the room. Her face showed that she was still deep in thought.

The master and the disciple, the two of them just stood there quietly. They looked at each other and just said nothing.

After a long while, they sighed at the same time.

"What he said, was it true?" Bing Xinyue asked.

About human and worldly wisdom, the disciple was obviously better than the master.

"Yes." Wenren Chuchu nodded and said, "Master, what he said is biting indeed. It is difficult to agree with. But it is true in some points. I can't deny it."

...

Chapter 219: Impossible

Bing Xinyue nodded with a thinking expression and said, "So, in your opinion, he is still trustworthy?"

"Yes." Wenren Chuchu nodded.

"This Feng Zhiling is irritating, but he shouldn't be a bad guy. At least he is definitely not against us, right?" Bing Xinyue kept asking.

"That's right." Wenren Chuchu nodded heavily.

"You have a little bit of special feelings to him, right?" Bing Xinyue asked.

"Yes." Wenren Chuchu answered without any hesitation, and then she realized she had said something wrong, so she shook her head hurriedly, "No! Master, no!"

"Silly girl. You silly girl." Bing Xinyue couldn't help smiling. She said softly, "Our sect had a special martial arts. For so many years, we treat the relationship between men and women like it is a horrible taboo. We never dare to step a bit closer to it. However, if you truly like a man, it is fine. We are indeed master and disciple, but we are all women at the same time. Of course I understand how a woman will want to have a family and a man who cares about her the most. A girl like you, who is from the royal family, must be more eager for the popular human feelings!"

"But it is impossible. No matter who I am, where I am, it is just impossible." Wenren Chuchu lowered her head and said bitterly, "Master, I can't deny my special feelings to him. However, I can understand why I have such feelings."

Bing Xinyue was interested and she asked, "Oh?"

"Well, I met him before. It was such a coincidence." There was a sense of confusion in Wenren Chuchu's eyes. She said, "That day, I bought him back to my residence. He wanted to escape, so he said he could cure my disease... At that time, you were already at the important moment. I was so surprised so I just ignored my dignity and let him try on me..."

"He saw nothing during the whole process. In fact, I didn't take all my clothes off. But he has touched my body with his hands after all..." She blushed and said embarrassedly, "Before that... no one had ever seen my body... Not to mention touch it..."

She said stutteringly, "I thought that those women who insisted they should marry the men who had 'touched' them were fools. I couldn't understand them. However, when such a thing happened to me, I discovered that I couldn't forget the feeling of that moment... He is the first guy who has touched my body after all..."

"It was a... It is hard to describe... It was a... maybe... a feeling of resignation..." She said, "Can you understand, master?"

"In fact, I don't know him that well. We contacted a few times.

That is all. There is only one strange feeling in my mind... But it doesn't mean I like him, I guess..." She said without certainty.

Bing Xinyue frowned and said, "Maybe it is a feeling... A feeling of confusion?"

They both had no certainty on this.

They had never experienced such things. How could they understand?

"Besides, the two kingdoms are at war. I am on the Kingdom of Lan-Feng's side, while he is on the Kingdom of Chen's side. We may be destined to be enemies forever. The war may last forever... The Ling-Bao Hall under his lead has just announced that they would support the Kingdom of Chen in full efforts not long ago... We are already in hostile positions. Regardless of my martial art, we are still impossible to be together."

Wenren Chuchu smiled bitterly and said.

Bing Xinyue sighed.

"Maybe one day we will have to fight till one of us falls down because we are in different sides..." Wenren Chuchu spoke sadly, "Even if I do like him, how can I express it? What can I do about it?"

Bing Xinyue sighed again and said lightly, "But you showed him

your true face today. As I can remember, for all these years, you have never shown any young man your true face. Am I right?"

Wenren Chuchu blushed and said sadly, "Yes. That is another strange thing I keep thinking about. Why would I do that..."

"I have the answer for this one. A girl will doll herself up for the person whom she loves..." Bing Xinyue sighed, "That is reasonable."

Wenren Chuchu blushed and then her face turned pale. She said, "But after he saw my true face, he didn't act surprised at all. All attracted... Oh. It seems he truly have composure. At least, like he said, he can be with no desires, so that he doesn't need a woman to satisfy him... Doesn't it mean that he had never put me in his heart at all..."

Bing Xinyue said affirmatively, "He is a very dangerous figure. That is a certain thing."

Wenren Chuchu was shocked and then she sighed with sorrow. She said, "He always knew I was wearing a fake face. He must be in disguise too... I... I don't even know how he looks like or who he really is... How old is he... Gosh..."

Bing Xinyue was shocked, "You mean... You know nothing about him?"

Wenren Chuchu nodded with a blushed face.

And then she lowered her head.

Bing Xinyue sighed heavily and said, "How can you be so silly, girl. How can you not investigate this..."

Wenren Chuchu actually didn't know what Feng Zhiling looked like, yet she had already given up her full heart... To Bing Xinyue, it was just such an impossible and unbelievable thing.

Wenren Chuchu was thinking about it and then she started to shed tears.

She finally realized that no matter whether she was or wasn't in love with Feng Zhiling, it was impossible for them to be together.

While they were both silent in the Land of Han-Yang, something was happening in the Qing-Yun Realm.

It was in a big mountain that was hidden by mists.

There was a palace standing high and straight.

Deep inside the palace, there was a mass of dark cloud floating. There seemed to be a person inside the thick dark cloud. It was difficult to tell the person's face or body. Nobody knew whether it was a man or a lady behind the cloud.

This palace... was exactly the most horrible sect in the Qing-Yun Realm, the No.1 Evil Palace!

The Misty Cloud Palace!

There was a rumor about the Misty Cloud Palace. In the palace, there were female monsters who would kill with just a wink...

The dark cloud was rolling and floating. Gradually, it moved more and more tempestuously.

It was full of some kind of bursting... unstable aura of termagancy!

...

Chapter 220: Heavenly Reverse Impact

After a while, there sounded a voice full of astonishment from inside the dark cloud. - Yi? -

It sounded like something suddenly happened and the person was unprepared and didn't know what to do.

The voice was exquisite, and at the same time, it was weirdly raucous.

After another while, the dark cloud suddenly exploded. - Boom. - It turned into endless streams of dark mist flying fast to different directions. The word "fast" might not be appropriate enough, because they were moving rapidly like millions of arrows flying out.

The mansion house where the person stayed flew up to the sky and exploded in the air.

A harsh scream sounded and a stream of blood was shooting out fast. It got through the giant rock in front of the palace and then left a small red hole on it.

The next moment, a slim figure rushed out fast like lightning.

It was a figure with the aura of world-breaking. It rushed straight up to the sky and shouted to the sky, "Gods! Do you really want to extinguish the Misty Cloud Palace?"

After she shouted, she stretched her arms and the air around her was actually shaking rapidly like water waves. The waves spread out gradually and countless mountains around suddenly collapsed.

It caused the collapse that covered the circumference of over three thousand miles.

At the moment, over a dozen figures rushed over flying from the palace on the ground. They looked at the one who was covered by streams of floating dark smoke. They felt frightened.

[What is going on?

The world-shocking, the second ranking powerful cultivator, our Prime Grandmaster, how come she suddenly turned mad?

Isn't she cultivating peacefully inside the house to seek for a chance to improve?

Why is she so out of control?]

"What happened, Prime Grandmaster?" Several beautiful ladies rushed over to her.

"I am doomed."

The Prime Grandmaster's face was covered behind some dark

cloud. It was hard to see the expression on her face.

Yet the three words she just said were like the most shocking lightning striking on the crowd. They were all shaking in the air and almost fell down to the ground.

['I am doomed']?

Is our Prime Grandmaster dying?

If we lost our Prime Grandmaster, our Misty Cloud Palace will never be able to escape the fate of getting wiped out. We have been staying firmly in the Qing-Yun Realm because our Prime Grandmaster has been shocking the whole realm with her prowess.

If we lost our Prime Grandmaster... If she fell...]

"Prime Grandmaster, what happened to you? Why did you say such unlucky words?" They asked anxiously.

The Prime Grandmaster would never curse herself for no reason, yet they still hoped that their Prime Grandmaster only felt frustrated because of the difficulty in her cultivation. They hoped that she wasn't really falling.

"The Heavenly Reverse Impact..." The Prime Grandmaster didn't sound sad at all. In her voice, there was only pity and unwillingness.

It was peaceful and even indifferent.

However, there was like a monstrous flame of anger hidden inside her voice, which seemed able to burn the whole Qing-Yun Realm down.

"Heavenly Reverse Impact? It actually is the Heavenly Reverse Impact!" They were all shocked.

"Yes. I should have three more years to live. As long as I can find the Renaissance Jade Lotus within three years, I can live one thousand years longer... I thought I owned the three years. I thought there was always hope when I had time. It is difficult to find the Renaissance Jade Lotus indeed, but there are still chances.

However, I didn't expect this accident. I was cultivating just now, and suddenly, the Heavenly Reverse Impact happened on me. It interrupted my route to life and made the illness occur sooner than it should. Rather than three years, now I only have one month left."

The Prime Grandmaster spoke with a bland voice. It was so peaceful like a bowl of pure water.

However, such shocking news had astonished all the others. They suddenly didn't know what to say.

[One month.

That is what is left to us before our last guardian, the Prime Grandmaster, dies?]

When such a great grandmaster level cultivator died, her last breath would affect the phenomena of the world. At that moment, the whole Qing-Yun Realm would be covered by the glow, and the sky would be full of colorful lotus patterns. Nobody could lie about it.

When that happened, the entire realm would realize this great cultivator, who had been shocking the realm and suppressing all the other cultivators in the realm, the guardian of the Misty Cloud Palace, was gone.

When that day comes, it would pronounce the end of the Misty Cloud Palace.

It was no joke that this sect would disappear within one night.

"I am going to kill Xue Danru. You don't need to find me. Just live your lives and be good..." The Prime Grandmaster shouted and then her slim body rushed up in the air. Dark smoke was rolling from everywhere around her, and then it became a mass of cloud. She was heading to the east.

When she went far away, she made a shout that contained unwillingness.

"Why did the gods never bless the tens of thousands of our people in the Misty Cloud Palace. How can we resolve such a fatal problem?"

The sadness and anger in her voice was difficult to suppress.

The others all could hear the anger, the sadness and the unwillingness in their Prime Grandmaster's voice. It meant helplessness and desperation.

She didn't say much to them, except two simple lines. That "live your lives and be good" had revealed lots of her thoughts.

They looked at the rolling dark cloud moving further and further away like the sky was cracking down. They knew that they might never see their Prime Grandmaster again in their lives.

She was never coming back to them.

Yet they still didn't want to leave. They just kept looking to the east sentimentally, even though their Prime Grandmaster had already disappeared from their sights.

When they finally saw something different in the east sky, the sky actually turned endlessly red like flames...

That meant the countless volcanoes in the east bursted at the same time for some reason.

The entire sky in the east was dyed with red.

That meant their Prime Grandmaster... made her strike.

She was trying to remove the biggest threat of their sect with the rest of her life.

The ladies were all weeping and moaning with sorrow.

"What is the Misty Cloud Palace going to do without our Prime Grandmaster?"

"Without the Misty Cloud Palace, who in this whole world would be willing to hold justice for us, the weak females?"

They lost control and cried out loud.

"We are not leaving."

"We won't leave. Not even if we will die."

"We will just wait for the day when the Prime Grandmaster passes and the enemies all come to us. We are going to perish together with our enemies!"

...

Chapter 221: Who the Hell Are You?

"We will wait for the day to come. The day our Prime Grandmaster passes, the enemies will definitely get to us! On that day, we are going to get them down to hell together! We will die fighting! When we die, we go to the world where our Prime Grandmaster is going... Let's be under her protection again when we meet her again..."

Suddenly, the Misty Cloud Palace was full of weeping and crying.

The red color in the east sky lasted for a whole day. And then suddenly, there came a huge sound of explosion!

The whole Qing-Yun Realm was shocked by the explosion...

And then an extremely desolate scream seemed to peak the firmament.

And then everything returned to silence!

The whole world was silent.

Nobody knew what exactly happened...

[Is the Prime Grandmaster alright?]

The ladies looked at each other.

"We should go check on the fight." An old lady with white hair said with decisiveness in her eyes, "No matter what, we have to know how the Prime Grandmaster is..."

They made up their minds and dozens of figures rushed to forward in the air without hesitation. They all wiped their tears and headed to the red sky.

...

It was the Land of Han-Yang at the moment.

Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue had been quiet for one and a half days... They had different thoughts about this Feng Zhiling. They both had been thinking about their own concerns. Nobody actually talked.

Finally, it was Bing Xinyue who broke the silence.

"Chuchu... I have been thinking for a long time. What do you think if we capture this Feng Zhiling and take him back to our sect... What will happen?" Bing Xinyue spoke seriously.

Wenren Chuchu's face turned pale immediately, "Master... Is it the right thing to do?"

Bing Xinyue took a breath in and said lightly, "Of course I know it

isn't. It will definitely make the relation between him and us extremely bad. However... This guy is far too important to the Misty Cloud Palace. We can do no wrong decision on this..."

When she was saying that, somewhere in the Qing-Yun Realm, a dark figure appeared instantly and then reached its hands with rolling dark clouds. It actually grabbed the space and split it apart!

The slim figure entered the split.

She actually split the space directly!

Back to the yard.

Wenren Chuchu was showing a dark face. She murmured, "Master, there is something you don't know. Feng Zhiling has a tough backbone. He is unbelievably tougher than we can imagine. Back to the day when he was hit by his enemy with some extremely vicious martial art, I couldn't treat him even with full efforts. That day, he was being tortured by that pain. Even I felt frightened only by watching him. He actually didn't give up. He didn't even shout while he was in a coma. Such a tough guy, if we capture him, other than our relationship getting broken, he may kill himself because of being disgraced. If that happens, our sect's only hope will be gone forever..."

Bing Xinyue was quiet. After a while, she said, "You are right. I didn't know he was such a tough man..."

While talking, the two of them suddenly felt the world was shaking. They felt dizzy and found it difficult to stand firm.

The sky above them actually turned dark for a second!

Bing Xinyue raised her head and said with confusion, "What is happening?"

Wenren Chuchu held her own head and said, "I have no idea. Is it the earthquake..."

"Definitely not." Bing Xinyue's eyes were full of cautiousness. She looked around in alarm.

Neither of them had noticed that there was a shadow getting to the roof of the house.

It was real but fake at the same time. It was just standing there. However, nobody realized it was there. The dark shadow saw Bing Xinyue and actually showed relief in its eyes.

[I finally found her.

It is not too late yet.]

Wenren Chuchu continued, "At the very least, even if we catch Feng Zhiling and successfully force him to raise the Regeneration Lotus for us, will he be really willing to? Other than the matter of

raising Regeneration Lotus, he can resolve the illness of our kind, yet he needs to do it by touching us skin to skin... I don't think there will be anybody in our sect who will agree to do so."

The person on the roof was preparing to get down, but when she heard this, she suddenly stopped. Her eyes blinked, [Skin to skin? the illness?

What illness would it be...]

Bing Xinyue said, "That is true. It is an unsolvable problem. Our people are all virgins. They will never allow a guy to touch them. Then, this Feng Zhiling... Should we just leave him in the Land of Han-Yang?"

Wenren Chuchu quietly sighed in relief. For no apparent reason, she felt serene contrary in her mind. She would feel happy bullying Feng Zhiling herself... However, if somebody else wanted to do something to him, she just didn't feel so good about it. She would want to object.

She smiled and said, "I think it may be a good thing to let him be in the Land of Han-Yang though. It is a low-class realm after all. There will rarely be people from the Qing-Yun Realm here. It is good for keeping the secrets of our sect. And if we build a good relationship with him, it will be a good thing for our sect. Such a man like Feng Zhiling will get to the Qing-Yun Realm sooner or later.

When he get to the Qing-Yun Realm, he will definitely realize the

cruel reality in the Qing-Yun Realm with the law of the jungle. And if we help him when he meets his problems there, he will be thankful to us. At that time, we won't need to beg him. He will ask for cooperation, and he will be improved a lot by then. Maybe we will have more good opportunities. The most important thing we should deal with would be your illness, master..."

Speaking of that, she was sad and concerned again.

Bing Xinyue looked into the distance with her blank eyes. There was hesitation in her eyes for the first time though. She said, "Let me think deeper about it... This... skin to skin thing..."

The person on the roof blinked her eyes that was profound like the oceans again.

She seemed to be sensitive about the three words too.

Skin to skin.

"Then take your time to think through it." Wenren Chuchu knew that her master had been moved at the moment, so she added, "Now our group, even our sect has met our hope. The bright future is ahead of us. If you are still concerned about the... urh... If our ancestors know that, they must be sad... The caring thought you have for me is also the same thought the ancestors had to you. It is the same thing..."

Bing Xinyue's eyes showed more hesitation. She spoke lightly,

"Stop talking for a while. Let me think deeper..."

Wenren Chuchu stopped talking and only sighed with sorrow.

She murmured, "Why is he the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall? Why... Since Ling-Bao Hall was established, it never truly got involved in any disturbances. Why is it getting right into the affair of war between the kingdoms this time? ..."

"Who are you? What do you really look like?"

"What is your true identity?"

...

Chapter 222: Who Is Following Me?

Wenren Chuchu frowned and murmured to herself. She was confused and helpless at the same time.

[Do I like this guy?

I am not sure...

Don't I?

I have no idea...

He is so important to the sect, but in this world, he is my enemy...

I can't kill him, and I can't like him...

What should I do?]

Her mind was extremely complex at the moment.

In fact, Bing Xinyue was having some complex thoughts too.

They both just stood there. Nobody talked. They just stood there and got lost in their own thoughts...

Bing Xinyue was considering... [Maybe I should return to the sect for some days?

Maybe... After I take care of my illness, I should go to see Sister Jun.

How is she?

I have to ask her... who else did she tell that thing.

How come such a private thing have spread to the Land of Han-Yang?]

She just stood there quietly with complex thoughts. She couldn't help sighing and said, "To use the Yin and Yang power to remove the illness should be a good thing... But... Why does it have to be a guy? ..."

The person on the roof wanted to finally get down, yet she hesitated and murmured, "Ling-Bao Hall? Feng Zhiling? Yin and Yang? Remove the illness? ..."

The expression in her eyes was changing, "Skin to skin..." Her voice was full of complexity.

And then she just shook and her black robe became a light mass of smoke. She just disappeared...

That was some marvelous martial art that had reached transcendence.

The day when Ye Xiao left the secret residence of Wenren Chuchu, he felt unbelievable somehow. [How could they just let me go so easily? They actually didn't capture me?

They didn't even bargain with me?

I just casually walked out, and they didn't even chase me?

What the hell is wrong with them?

What is going on?

That is unreasonable. That is so against logic. It just doesn't make sense.]

When he turned angry to the ladies, it was half real. In fact, he was using it to try to get out of that place...

He was thinking that it would be great if he could get out, but even if he couldn't, he could get to know what the bearing limit of the ladies.

It wouldn't be good to him if he stayed around with them, talking about the same topic.

And... However... He just got out of there. He actually got away from that extremely dangerous place.

[What is wrong?

I made it.

How come I just made it?

Wasn't it too easy?]

Ye Xiao truly felt strange about it.

He kept feeling strange till he arrived at the Ling-Bao Hall.

He even suspected that the ladies were letting him off in order to catch him later. They might just want to figure out all about his identity and his place. On the way back to the Ling-Bao Hall, Ye Xiao had operated his spiritual mind and sensibility in full effort, yet he found nothing.

There might be two possible reasons why he couldn't find anything. First, the ladies might be too powerful to be discovered while chasing him. He was too weak. However, he knew it was not the truth. Bing Xinyue was indeed far stronger than him, but she had no idea how powerful Ye Xiao really was, so she wouldn't be that careful. For her, to follow an ant who was lower than the Sky Origin Stage was a piece of cake. She would think that Ye Xiao was unable to notice. However, deep inside Ye Xiao, he was still the

Xiao Monarch. The Xiao Monarch had been far stronger than Bing Xinyue. His spiritual mind and sensibility would definitely sense her if she was chasing him. Yet he found nothing.

The other one was much simpler. There was nobody following him at all.

[Isn't it too unreasonable if nobody is following me?]

After making sure that nobody was following him, he returned to the Ling-Bao Hall at once. For safety concerns, he didn't get back home this night. He just stayed overnight in the Ling-Bao Hall.

No talking for a whole night. The next day afternoon, nobody came to him. He started to feel relieved.

So he took several pieces of rare stones from the Ling-Bao Hall and left. He was in relief at this moment.

However, when he just got out the Ling-Bao Hall, he shuddered.

It was out of nothing at all. It was like he was fearing something all of a sudden.

He knew something was wrong.

It was his spiritual sensibility that told him so. In other words, somebody was watching him.

He was very close to the Sky Origin Stage. With just a tiny step, he would become a Sky Origin Stage cultivator. It was impossible that he would shudder for no reason.

[So it finally came? It is my spiritual sensibility telling me that I am being watched. The one who is watching me must be much stronger than me. That is why I can't sense him directly. It must be somebody from Wenren Chuchu's sect who is trying to figure out who I am. I am not surprised though. This person is definitely not Bing Xinyue.

Otherwise, I would have sensed the traces of her because I have contacted with her. Who is this person then? I really didn't know that their sect was so powerful. They actually have another cultivator that is as strong as Bing Xinyue. Don't they fear that I will be pissed?]

He walked slowly to a corner and came out with other thoughts, [Maybe there is a third possibility. That perhaps a super grandmaster cultivator who is watching me from a rather far place from here. That person may have just glanced at me for a second... But if that is real, it means there is a cultivator who can make me shudder with only a glance from long distance. Then that person must be at least at the sixth level of the Dao Origin Stage.]

He was thinking, [No matter what, it is real that I am being watched. Maybe it was just some cultivator who walked pass this place. Maybe it was someone who had been following me for a long time... If it was just someone passing by, so be it. If it was somebody watching me intentionally, I will be exposed if I return

to the House of Ye.]

Thinking of that, he made the decision at once.

He wasn't surprised being watched. He had actually expected it. He didn't show any difference on his face. He just stretched his neck and casually walked on the street under the sunshine with his arms crossed on his chest.

In the dark corner far from him, a dark shadow was watching him and murmured, "This guy must be that Feng Zhiling... But why is he so slow?"

She kept looking at Ye Xiao walking from south to north on the street. He stopped and rubbed his head... And then he actually walked back.

...

Chapter 223: Do You Really Think You Can Escape?

The person in the dark was stunned. [What the hell is wrong with this guy? Is he insane walking back and forth again and again?

There are so many people walking on this street... I don't have any idea what to do yet...]

And then she saw Ye Xiao casually walk back to the Ling-Bao Hall and enter it. He didn't come out again for a long time.

That person was waiting patiently out there. After a long time, she used her spiritual mind to check on him. She nearly passed out for being annoyed. Feng Zhiling was drinking alone inside the Ling-Bao Hall.

He was truly in a leisure mood at the moment.

There was a giant fat guy that was so fat that could barely be seen in the world within ten thousand years sitting beside him. That fat guy was like a pile of dozens of skin-ripped pigs. He was serving Feng Zhiling affably...

He was serving and bootlicking at the same time...

Facing such flattery, Feng Zhiling the Monarch was actually

enjoying it... He seemed to be treading on air. He would laugh out loud from time to time. He was so full of satisfaction and proudness...

"What the hell is this?" The person in the dark was truly confused, "He had walked out for a long distance... Why did he return to the place and start drinking?"

This person was actually one of the three most powerful cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm. She was strong!

Her martial world experience was also so rich that nearly nobody could be a match to her.

However, strong like her, she actually couldn't figure out what was going on with this Feng Zhiling.

[Did he sense something wrong? ... No, that is impossible! He is so weak. Even after ten thousand years of cultivation, he will never be good enough to notice me!"]

...

The Feng Monarch was enjoying the drinks until the lights were lit in the city.

The person in the dark was filled with hate, and she nearly gritted with her teeth broken!

For so many times, she wanted to reach out her palm and break the whole city down!

[What a bastard! Okay, it is fine you want to drink. But it actually takes you dozens of times to drink up just a tiny cup of liquor! What the hell is wrong with you?

Are you even a man...]

When the street was most crowded in the day and the lights were on, Feng Monarch finally walked out of the Ling-Bao Hall.

"Finally, he finished drinking!" The person who was watching him felt relieved, "I hope he won't do any stupid things again."

However, things always went against one's hopes.

While she was hoping so, Feng Monarch actually got into a jewelry shop.

After he entered the shop, he started to pick and put down the jewelry again and again. He kept being captious. After he had picked one that he liked, he started to bargain about the price. It is reasonable that he would bargain while he was buying something, but the thing he wanted was worth four hundred eighty silver coins, yet he insisted to take it with two coins. The shopkeeper disagreed, yet he actually kept on pestering the shopkeeper. He raised his price from two coins to two and one-tenth coins and

added one-tenth coins at one time... It was just a hairpin, he actually bargained for over two hours... Finally, he got it by thirty-three and three-tenths silver...

The person was so annoyed that she even started to feel pain in her stomach.

The shopkeeper's face turned green. He must be really annoyed and didn't want to talk to Feng Zhiling anymore, so he sold the jewelry for such a low price...

He really didn't want to waste more time on this...

He saw it as giving money for luck and bless!

And then Feng Monarch casually walked while using the hairpin to clean his ears... After he cleaned it, he actually rubbed the filth from the ears and smelled it...

"Ohhh..." The great cultivator who was following him finally lost control when Feng Monarch smelled the filth for the seventh time and she threw up.

"That is so disgusting... How can the ladies want to touch him skin to skin... It will be better to die than to be touched by him..." She actually wanted to kill herself.

Feng Zhiling went to a makeup shop. And then he went to an arms shop...

He had actually entered dozens of shops.

All those shopkeepers showed weakness facing his torturing bargain. They all ended up green-faced when they saw Feng Monarch off!

At last, he walked out from a jade shop with two jade stones in his hands... As for the process he was bargaining and talking to the shopkeeper about the jade stones... The person in the dark didn't want to remember it at all. She just didn't want to feel angry!

It was midnight already and the street was empty.

Ye Xiao paced around in the center of the street. In fact, he was sensing secretly.

Finally, he confirmed that nobody was following him. Indeed it was his wrong impression. He thought that if somebody was chasing him, the person would have been out of control a long time ago.

Yet on the empty street under the dark silent night, there was only himself. It should be a perfect chance to attack him!

Yet nothing ever happened at all.

That proved that he had wrong impressions about it.

[It turns out I was wrong! I have to remember that my natural born spiritual sensibility isn't that perfect. It can be wrong sometimes!] Ye Xiao took a breath out with relief. And then he looked around and operated the One Laughter in Skyline... and he was gone.

- Shoot! -

He disappeared.

[I have been away from home for such a long time. Uncle Song must be so worried about me...]

So Ye Xiao was moving fast.

Nobody was on the street after all. The night was dark. He thought nobody would be able to notice him at the moment...

The person in the dark was suppressing the anger in her heart. yet she actually heard a sharp sound coming out in the sky...

She looked immediately up only to find that the Feng Monarch had disappeared...

At this moment, she was enlightened and got to know something. [That bastard was acting because for some reason, he actually found out he was being stalked...]

He felt relieved when he was sure nobody was following him. That was why he just left so fast.

She understood it all. [How could a man who owns the whole Ling-Bao Hall buy some cheap stuff in these little tiny shops. And he actually bargained with pleasure...]

In fact, he should be the wealthiest person in this world!

"Well, however... Now you start to run. Do you really think that you can get away?"

...

Chapter 224: Song Jue's Sadness

The person in the dark sneered. Her spiritual mind was instantly unleashed. Within only a second, the whole Chen-Xing City was actually covered by her sensation.

Within a radius of five thousand miles, she actually didn't miss anything in her mind.

Everything was in her sense.

However, a second after putting out her spiritual mind, she immediately drew back her mind. She just focused her spiritual mind into one line locking on Ye Xiao who was running wildly in the dark night.

She didn't draw back her mind to save the energy, in fact...

Her face was on heat; she was even blushing.

It was completely red.

"Impudence!"

She fiercely cursed.

Because when she just used her spiritual mind to sense everything in this city, she actually found at least dozens of

thousands of... couples... doing that kind of embarrassing thing...

She suddenly felt unwell...

There were even some perverts forcing young girls...

[Humph!]

Several streams of her spiritual mind immediately released killing intent. They were like swords from heavens, suddenly falling to several places in the Chen-Xing City...

At this night, all the bad guys who were bullying young ladies were killed with their whole families along.

Only the girls survived...

When the girls got out after being blessed by the gods, they actually met no resistance. All those who dared to stop them got killed at once before they had the time to act.

At that night, over forty-three hundred people died in such a strange way.

Their dead bodies all looked the same. Their heads looked fine, yet inside their heads, there were only masses of mushy things. Their bodies looked fine, yet inside their bodies, their organs were all ripped into pieces with a mushy dantian...

That was a way that made people die completely.

Even their souls were vanished.

This event had become a mysterious case in the Chen-Xing City.

It had become something that frightened those men who wanted to do anything dirty against the girls for many years.

"Such kind of men should all die! Their families should die too, because they didn't stop them. Those who helped them in doing such a crime should also die! I won't feel ashamed killing all of them."

The person in the dark quietly flew up. She seemed indifferent about the bloody slaughter she just did. She just flew up to the air like a trace of cyan smoke. A stream of her spiritual mind had locked onto Ye Xiao who was walking into the General's House.

"Humph. It turns out he is one of the people in the General's House..."

The person humphed and moved herself.

The next moment, she had stood on the roof above Ye Xiao's room.

She was silent.

Ye Xiao actually couldn't sense anything about it.

This person was truly powerful that no one could know how strong she exactly was.

Even the Xiao Monarch had never been as strong as her.

When Ye Xiao entered the room, Song Jue was waiting anxiously for Ye Xiao to come back.

"Where the hell have you been? How can you come back so late?" Song Jue's face was not so good. It was dark like the bottom of a pot.

Song Jue shouldn't be blamed for being angry though. Since his big brother left, his nephew kept on appearing and disappearing mysteriously. He always couldn't find him whenever he disappeared.

This time, it was rather immoderate. He had actually been gone for two days.

"Cough..." Ye Xiao coughed and said, "I..."

"Hold on!" Song Jue spoke furiously, "I see. I know it. Every time when you cough before you talk, you are going to lie. Just tell me

the truth."

Ye Xiao was shocked, "Cough? Going to lie? Really?"

Song Jue felt complacent though, "Your little trick will never work on me, you little boy. Every time when you move your butt, I will know if you are going to piss or going to poo. You cough again and I will beat the shxt out of you."

Ye Xiao was speechless. He thought, [Fine... I will listen to your guidance. I won't cough. Since when do I have such a problem? I am just going to tell some lies. Big deal? To hell I cough. I will never cough again.]

"In fact, yesterday I..." He suddenly stopped after saying just a few words. He thought, [What am I going to say?

I can't tell him the truth.

Can I tell you that I got captured? Then how should I explain how I came back?] In fact, it doesn't matter what he should say after all. If Song Jue heard that he had been captured, he would rush to the ladies house for sure. That was a definite thing he would do.

Actually, it was fine that he would get to the ladies, but the question was... The lady Bing Xinyue was far too strong. Even ten or twenty Song Jues couldn't defeat her. Song Jue would die for sure.

"I was just feeling bad yesterday so I got drunk out there. I came back when I felt awake. I didn't delay anything important." After saying so, he coughed again.

"You coughed? Did you lie again?" Song Jue shouted angrily, "Speak! Where the hell have you been?"

Ye Xiao was trying to lie again when he opened his mouth. But he then covered his mouth with his hands. That was just too obvious...

"Cough? You want to keep lying? You bastard, can't you just tell me the truth? Don't you have any other words to say other than lies?" Song Jue shouted again.

Ye Xiao was shocked.

And then he lowered his head.

[Ah... Life is so hard.]

After a long while, Song Jue sighed and lowered his head too. He talked to Ye Xiao, "Please, no matter where you will go next time, if you don't want to tell me where you will go, can you just at least tell me how long will you be gone? Please? That is the only thing your uncle will beg you for..."

Do you know during the days you had been missing, how I prayed for the gods, all of them... I was so worried that something would happen to you."

He looked like he was going to weep, "Your father treats you like you are a piece of meat in his heart. Yet he actually value the country so much that he actually just left... He left me here alone to watch you, a strong unruly young man, with my old and weak arms and legs. Making troubles is like having dinner to you, you little prick... I am not your father... Yet your father actually gave me the title as a steward... What kind of steward keeps shouting at his young master... But I have to take care of you... And I actually can't do anything to discipline you... But I can't let you be in danger... What a stupid boring fxcking doltish thing that makes me want to hang myself on the roof."

Song Jue grabbed his hair and shouted with sadness, "What did I do that I owe you son and father so much... How many billion debts have I made that I have to pay them back in one lifetime for you two... Oh my god... Why can't the gods show mercy to me..."

...

Chapter 225: Incursion

The more Song Jue talked, the more he felt sad. He felt like he couldn't live such life anymore. He felt that his life was full of darkness and desperations...

After speaking all of this, he raised his head and found that Ye Xiao, who should be standing there listening to him, was gone...

"Where are you!" Song Jue shouted.

Inside Ye Xiao's room, there came the sound of him snoring.

That seemed telling Song Jue, "I am sleeping. I think you should go get some rest too..."

"What the ^(&*%*@%^*@^(&(..." Song Jue felt that his anger was blocking his throat. He nearly passed out. [So you actually didn't even listen to me when I talked so much there. What kind of people are you? Do you even have conscience? You are actually much more terrible than your terrible father!]

He couldn't help cursing again and again with different kind of words to the sky.

The whole House of Ye turned silent that even a needle dropping on the floor could be heard.

Even the person on the roof felt admiring. She had heard somebody cursing before, she had also heard somebody cursing loudly and rudely like he was trying to crash the whole world down... however, she truly hadn't heard anybody cursing in a loud voice for over two hours without stopping. And all the words from his mouth were different. [This steward must be an outstanding man in the area of cursing in the world.]

Ye Xiao was covering his head, pretending he couldn't hear him.

The truth was that he didn't want to lie; he just couldn't explain it.

How could he explain? How should he explain the whole process?

If he started it, he had to tell everything after it. That was the only way he could explain it clearly.

Yet there was something he should never tell anybody else. Not even to his own relatives.

That was why Ye Xiao had to escape.

He pretended he was sleeping, so he snored. The shouts and curses from outside the door were actually like some magical whistling that kept getting through his brain. That voice was so impassioned and loud.

After over two hours, Song Jue finally left.

Ye Xiao felt relieved at last, [What the heck... That was an aura that could swallow the whole universe. Admirable... Admirable... I definitely don't have the ability to do so. I just can't reach that stage. I should better avoid it...]

He finally got the chance to really sleep.

He sighed and took the quilt. Actually, he was forcing his spiritual mind into the Spaces and start his cultivation. However, he still felt distracted. He just couldn't calm down.

He was surprised. That was something that had never happened to him before.

[What is wrong?

Is there something wrong going to happen?

Or has something wrong happened already?]

He then just sat up since he couldn't focus on cultivating. He frowned and got lost in thoughts. He was trying to figure out which part went wrong.

[Is it Wenren Chuchu's place? Or is it Bing Xinyue? Is it Ling-Bao Hall? Maybe... Is it the war around the kingdom?

There are seldom things that can distract me without being noticed by myself.]

Ye Xiao was deep and lost in thoughts, yet he still didn't have the answer. He murmured, "Why am I so distracted tonight?"

In fact, the person on the roof was also distracted at the moment.

She was thinking the same with Ye Xiao, [Why am I so distracted tonight?]

Feng Zhiling had removed his disguise and revealed his true face. He was a handsome young man sitting on his bed lost in thoughts...

Her eyes were flashing. She was obviously in hesitation.

[What should I do?

I have less than one month to live...

After one month, without the Renaissance Jade Lotus, I will be dead.

My life means little, yet how is the sect going to survive?

Losing my protection, the whole sect will enter a state of

disunity, waiting to be ripped.

All that our ancestors have built will fall into ruins.

I was here only to talk to Bing Xinyue and tell her my last words, yet I found that... There actually is such a man who had both the Yin and Yang powers.

That is the only way other than the Renaissance Jade Lotus that can help me.

But if I want to survive without the Renaissance Jade Lotus, I will have to be touched by this man skin to skin?

That is something I will never agree with.

I have been keeping my virginity for so many years, and now I have to give it to a strange man? And he is actually a man from such a low-class realm who was weak like an ant?

How is that acceptable?]

She silently stood on the roof. The wind was blowing her hair at the night. She was lost in confusion.

After thinking for a long time, Ye Xiao couldn't figure out the reason. So he sat cross-legged again and operated the martial art to calm himself down. However, no matter how he tried, he kept

getting more and more distracted. He had no idea why he would be like this.

After trying for several times, he sighed and murmured, "It is going to be dawn... What a weird night."

The person on the roof was shocked.

[It is going to be dawn...]

She gritted with her teeth, and her eyes emitted the glow of decisiveness.

She waved her hand and then the sky that had started to become bright returned to darkness. Everything was dark again.

Endless dark clouds were gathering from all directions. It covered the whole Chen-Xing City. The next moment, it started to thunder, and the wind started to blow and howl.

After a while, she waved her right hand. Ye Xiao's room became a forbidden area that was separated from the world.

A massive stream of energy suddenly filled the room.

She suddenly flashed and became like a trace of cyan smoke entering the room.

Ye Xiao's room was locked, yet she actually managed to enter it within just a second.

Ye Xiao was still lost in thoughts with his eyes frowning. He was trying to figure out the reason why he was so distracted. He wanted to solve it. That's why he didn't notice that there was another person in the room all of a sudden.

Till he heard someone took in a deep breath, he finally discovered that there was a person in black inside the room.

"Who is it?" Ye Xiao was scared.

[This guy can actually get rid of my spiritual sensation and the sensation of my Space...

Although I am weak now and I cannot use the Spaces in full power, this guy must be some special superior cultivator as he can manage to do this.

He must be at least the Dream Origin Stage, a super grandmaster.

In other words, he is definitely not from the Land of Han-Yang.

He must have come from other realms.

Why does a person strong like this come to my room so silently?

What does he want?]

...

Chapter 226: Hesitation

The person in black didn't answer him. She just shook her body, and her eyes emitted some strange glow. Then, she raised her right hand and a massive power hit on Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao could only feel that his sight turned dark, and he didn't have the time to react before he passed out.

The person in black stepped forward and put him on the bed.

Although she had only done two things, her body was shaking badly.

And then she quickly reached out her hand and grabbed Ye Xiao's wrist.

A soft and exquisite spiritual power instantly entered Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai. Within a short while, she had moved around Ye Xiao's entire Jing and Mai. She could sense all the details about Ye Xiao's condition.

"I see... No wonder he can remove our illness..."

"The power of two extremes with the purple qi..." The person in black showed some extremely complex glow in her profound eyes, "As expected, the man in the prediction finally showed up... But... Why are you so late?"

One month... I only have one month..."

After hesitating for a long while, she finally made up her mind. She gritted with her teeth and flipped her sleeve. She showed her pale and elegant hands and reached them into Ye Xiao's clothes...

Her hands were shaking, so was her entire body.

Her face was covered by a mass of dark cloud, yet the dark cloud was also shaking.

To keep the hands, body and mind stable was what a super grandmaster should be capable of. She was such a great grandmaster, yet she was acting weirdly this time. Her mind was struggling and she was lost in hesitation.

At the moment, the storms was going wild outside the window. It was like the world was turning over...

"One month..." She murmured. Her lips were shaking. Tears were rolling inside her eyes, "I don't care about my life after living for such a long time... But... If I die, what should the sect do next?"

"But... My virginity..."

"How can I ruin my virginity after keeping it for countless of years... on such a strange man?"

"Should I give up on this? Or should I just take it? Both of them are the right choices, yet neither of them is what I want..."

She was shaking badly. Her eyes were full of confusion and hesitation.

If someone who knew her saw this, that person would probably pass out.

Because nobody had ever seen her so weak like this. No one could imagine that she actually had such a soft side. Her pale hands were shaking and she took off the buttons on Ye Xiao's clothes. One... Two... Three...

Ye Xiao was in a coma. He didn't know anything about this. He could only accept whatever was being done to him...

However, when his broad and strong chest was revealed, her hands could feel the heat in his body. That made her shake more badly...

And then she trembled as if she got an electric shock. She suddenly stopped. Her face was turning green and then pale. She murmured, "I..."

And then she stood up and covered her face. She squatted on the floor and said, "Oh my god... What should I do? Why is this burden all put on my shoulder?"

"I... I can't do it..."

She raised her head facing up. The dark clouds were emitted around her body as tears dropped down from her cheeks...

At this moment...

A sneering came up outside the window, "Hey! Hey..."

The voice was clear and cold.

Under the storm, even though it was so noisy because of the rains and winds, she actually could clearly hear that voice.

She stood up immediately. At this moment, she became the cold and offish lady who was emitting killing intent.

"It is you?"

She spoke lightly.

The person outside sneered again. In her voice, disdain and indifference were evident.

She humphed. In fact, she had just set up a storm confinement on the whole city. Without her permission, normal people would never be able to get in here.

Not to mention getting close to the window and being heard clearly from outside the window.

This room was also under the storm confinement and also under a spiritual confinement.

"Xue Danru? Is it you?" She said slowly.

The voice outside was cold. It was sneering, "I really didn't expect this. Really. Things are so weird in the world. The Xuan Bing Fairy who is well-known in the Qing-Yun Realm actually has such a hobby. That is so unbelievable... Heh, heh, heh. For thousands of years, there are always men raping women, and they are truly despicable. However, I have never heard that a woman will want to rape a man. I think the myth about a female rapist turns out to be true...

Sister Xuan, you actually showed me the myth. You actually played the role yourself. Heh, heh... I am so impressed..."

The woman laughed with her cold voice, "The world-shocking, well-known pure Xuan Bing Fairy is so pure like this huh? That is reasonable. You pick the handsome young men in such a low-class realm. That is smart. It will be hard to know what you have done. I guess I have discovered a huge secret today.

Well, but you have just fcked my whole sect up and ruined all our inheritances. You actually lit up all 109 of our volcanoes and made them explode... Xuan Bing, you are so vicious. And you

actually have the leisure mood to look for a pretty young man in the Land of Han-Yang..." She clicked her tongue, "You really impress me."

The lady in black blushed immediately. She was so ashamed.

However, she just couldn't explain it.

She shook and humphed. Suddenly, her body emitted a powerful stream of energy, and she became a mass of smoke and cloud. She then disappeared in the room.

"Xue Danru, you yourself chose to go the tough way other than the easy one in front of you. Since you found me today, let me send you to hell before I die.

Back to the days when our sects were fighting, how many people have you killed? Today, I will avenge our people through your blood."

"Hahaha. Sister Xuan, are you trying to kill me so that I can't tell anybody about your little secret? Well, although you sincerely invited me to go to hell with you... I just don't want to... Hell is your place. Right, Sister Xuan?" She clicked her tongue, "What an erotic scene today... I am not going to interrupt you..."

...

Chapter 227: Accident

As the drizzle had filled the air of the world, a light stream of white fog rushed up to the sky. It was so fast that people could not notice it.

At the same time, a stream of black smoke was like a shadow chasing the white one with an intense killing intent!

In the drizzle, wherever they passed, the space there would collapse. Suddenly, black holes showed up in the sky one after another. They showed up and then disappeared...

Such strength was incredible and impossible to imagine in the mortal world!

Two unnoticeable shadows rushed up to the cloud within seconds. Nobody knew how far they had gone. And then there was the sound of explosion. - BOOM! -

This sound didn't seem loud, yet after it resounded, the whole Land of Han-Yang actually shook right after!

How powerful! The world actually shook because of it! The sky and earth were both shocked!

After that, the sound of thunders appeared continuously!

The world was shocked! The sky was full of sadness, and the earth was full of sorrow!

Almost all the mountains and hills shook because of such accident. There were many rocks rolling from the top of the mountains to the land...

The thunders continued, and it sounded faster and faster, louder and louder...

The heavy rain was covering more and more lands until it eventually covered the whole Land of Han-Yang.

In the sky, the lightnings could be seen as if they were the teeth of dogs gritting against each other. They were actually red, white, yellow, purple and blue...

They were colorful lightnings!

The colorful and strange lightnings kept crossing each other in the sky, as if they were painting the sky into a very beautiful image.

The thunder sounded more and more frequently one after another. At the end, several thunder sounds actually sounded at the same time. The thunder and lightnings kept piling up...

Everyone seemed to be awoken in dreams!

Hearing the frequent thunders, people couldn't stop guessing that there might be two ancient thunder gods fighting each other with their full powers in the sky!

They wouldn't stop until one of them died!

Nobody knew that they were actually right about it at some point! Though instead of two thunder gods, they were actually two ladies fighting in the sky. They were two gorgeous, beautiful women!

They were trying their best to try and kill each other!

Each strike, no matter whether it was a palm strike or a sword attack, made lightnings all over the sky. Within an instant, they had actually already made over three thousand strikes to each other!

Neither of them was willing to step back from each other!

The rain kept going without stopping.

The cloud and mist in the sky didn't seem scattering at all.

The thunder sounds kept shocking the world...

It seemed the thunder would go on until the sea turned dry and

the rocks were melted. And the rain seemed not to stop until the end of the world came...

An entire night had passed.

At the noon of the next day, it was still in the same situation. Nothing got better.

The water vapor that was created during the fight actually all got into the Spaces of Ye Xiao...

Ye Xiao was still in a coma...

He knew nothing about what was happening at all.

The East-rising Purple Qi was running automatically inside him. It kept crashing the blocked Jing and Mai in his body time and time again...

Till the next evening, the East-rising Purple Qi finally broke through the Jing and Mai of Ye Xiao with the help with the powerful water vapor. - Boom. -

Ye Xiao finally woke up.

He was frightened by the loud thunder just as he woke up, "What the hell! What is it? Why is it raining so heavily? How come the thunder can be so loud?!"

And then he remembered the things that had happened in the previous night.

"A person in black got into my room. That person looked at me with a complex expression in the eyes. And I suddenly fainted..." He frowned. It seemed like he didn't really know what had happened to him. The only thing he knew was that things were so weird at the moment.

And then he realized his chest was cold. When he looked down, he found that his cloth was untied. His chest showed up...

"Well this..." He looked at his own chest and lost his bearings.

"What the hell is this? Why did the person in black take off my tops after knocking me out..." He got up from the bed in a hurry. His face seemed pale, "I... I didn't get raped, did I?"

He then hurriedly checked himself and found nothing special. And then he operated his martial art to check his pure yang energy and discovered that it was still full without any loss... He got confused...

"What the hell happened? She is such a powerful cultivator. She should have done something after knocking me off! But it looks like she just left without doing anything to me!" He rubbed his head and couldn't think of any possible answers.

He hadn't even heard of such things in both his lives...

He couldn't believe that somebody would actually feel guilty.

So he thought, [Would it be... Bing Xinyue?

I didn't recognize her last night because I only looked at that person for less than a second. Yet I felt that the aura on that person was so similar with Wenren Chuchu's...

It must be Bing Xinyue. But... Why did she leave? Does it mean... she has already discovered my true identity? But... why did she even try to do this?]

He was so confused.

And then the shocking loud thunder attracted his attention!

He grabbed his clothes and stood at the window. He raised his head and stared at the amazing lightning image in the sky. He listened to the sounds of the thunder. The astonishment in his eyes stayed there for a long time!

Other people might think that the gods must be crazy to make thunders like this.

Yet Ye Xiao knew that it had nothing to do with gods.

And it had nothing to do with weather or climate!

It was caused by human activities!

[There must be a fight between two super grandmaster cultivators in the sky!

And it must be a life and death battle!]

The fight would go on until one of them died, or both of them died!

Most importantly, among all the persons Ye Xiao had known about in both his lives, none could make such an impact!

In simpler words, both of the two persons who were fighting in the sky were much more powerful than the Xiao Monarch in his previous life!

A lot more powerful!

Who could they be?

...

Chapter 228: You Risk Your Lives While I Cultivate

There is a saying that professionals value skills more highly, while non-professionals just enjoy the fun. Ye Xiao was weak indeed, yet he was a professional. That was why he could notice something different.

Sitting like a lofty mountain, standing like a great rainbow; acting like a storm surging, moving like a thunderbolt!

As Ye Xiao knew, the two people fighting in the sky were proven to be real powerful!

They must be great cultivators of the Dao Origin Stage, and they must be at the peak of the Dao Origin Stage!

In fact, they must have been just half a step upon the limit of the Qing-Yun Realm!

Ye Xiao was astonished.

In his previous life, he was one of the top cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm. There were certainly some cultivators stronger than him, but such a kind of cultivators were always secrets of their sects. They would never fight without a serious reason. And they would definitely not get involved into a life and death battle like this one!

It was merely the Land of Han-Yang, yet there were actually two super cultivators fighting here at the same time! And it was a life and death battle!

What made them fight in such a way in this mortal world?

Why did they have to fight in the sky of such a low-class realm?

Weren't they afraid that they might break the whole land?

That was hard to explain and to understand for Ye Xiao!

Looking at the rain getting heavier and heavier, and the thunder striking more and more frequently, Ye Xiao just couldn't understand it.

However, he didn't want to go closer and have a look at all...

If he was still the Xiao Monarch, he might have been there long ago.

Even though he was still much weaker than either of them as the Xiao Monarch, he would at least be able to watch them fight. He could hide himself safely and just watch as a Dao Origin Stage cultivator. In fact, such a world-shocking fight was so rare that it could not be seen once in thousands of years. If a cultivator could have the opportunity to watch such a fight, it would help them improve their cultivation for sure. If Ye Xiao could, he would never let the opportunity go!

However, he was just too weak at the moment. He could only get as high as they did, but even if he could, he wouldn't dare to. In such fights, if he got touched a little bit, he would instantly vanish, both his body and his soul...

He wasn't disappointed though. The fight had given him a lot of energy from the water vapor after all...

He wouldn't try to be unobtrusive. He just stood out there in the rain and operated the East-rising Purple Qi in full effort to absorb the water vapor!

The ladies were fighting with their lives up there in the sky, yet he actually used the water vapor they created to cultivate without even saying a hello.

His Boundless Space had absorbed it automatically indeed. That was good, but it was still without guidance. So it wouldn't be so efficient. Now the water vapor had filled the world for a whole day. It was so dense in the air. And Ye Xiao operated the East-rising Purple Qi in full effort. That was so efficient this time. He could feel a massive amount of water vapor turning into pure water element energy from the air and getting into the Water Space. He had absorbed a shocking amount of water element energy this time!

He kept operating the East-rising Purple Qi to take as much water vapor as he could. After just a few minutes, the Water Space had been filled up with water vapor. After another several minutes, the

wall of the Water Space started become moist. Gradually, the water vapor became many blue crystal water drops on the wall. They were like a lot of blue gems hanging on the wall of the Water Space...

One, two, three...

Before that, there had been only one water drop in the Water Space. Ye Xiao had gained it after a huge amount of hard work. It was really not easy to get one. However, within only two hours, there were countless of water drops on the wall of the Water Space already. And even more were forming.

At the same time, the East-rising Purple Qi improved a lot along with the water vapor getting into his Boundless Space!

[The increase of the water vapor in the Water Space can actually help improving the East-rising Purple Qi?

Or maybe it was not because of the water vapor; it was because of the increase of the water element energy!

No matter what, it has to be related to the increase of the water vapor inside.] Ye Xiao was elated thinking about this. So he started to work so hard to absorb more. He surely knew that it was not something that always could be seen. If the two of them suddenly stop fighting...

Then it meant the opportunity slipped away from his hand.

It was truly difficult to see a fight between two super capable cultivators!

As he knew, this was the first fight in the recent thousands of years that was in such a powerful level. If he missed this one, it might take him thousands of years to witness the next one!

After all, after they finished the fight, Ye Xiao thought that he should absorb as much as he could.

He operated the martial art so concentratedly...

So, in the sky of the entire Chen-Xing City...

The water vapor was really powerful. There was actually flood running on the streets of Chen-Xing City, the capital of the Kingdom of Chen. The places that were usually lower than the others had already become small lakes.

Inside the city, it was better after all, because there was a sewage system covering the whole city. Outside the city, it was terrible. It looked exactly like a huge flood. Some rivers had already risen up and covered the land.

The rain was still heavy, and it looked like the rain was going to ruin the whole city...

Suddenly, people were all thinking about how to deal with such a horrible flood...

There was water everywhere.

The west and the east battles actually ceased the hostilities temporarily because of such a heavy rain.

Ye Nantian in the north was confused and a little bit disappointed though.

They had already set up some traps, yet the Grassland Wolves couldn't come. The rain had actually submerged the whole battlefield!

It was not a good thing for the northern army though.

Because after the rain, the grass would grow a lot. Within a long period of time after it, the Northern Tribes could stop worrying about inadequate food. If the enemies were given a chance to rest, they would recover within a really short time, and they would become very difficult to deal with

...

Chapter 229: The Fight Between the Grandmasters

General Ye frowned and kept cursing, “What the hell is this! Why are good things only happening to Su Dingguo! Where is the justice...”

...

In the sky, the fight continued.

Two shadows, one was black while the other was white, created thousands of phantoms in the misty sky. They were having an extremely drastic fight.

The lady in black swung her sword and thousands of silver lightnings showed up and rushed forward. The lady in white moved her sword and thousands of red sword breaths flew in the air. They were cutting the whole space into pieces.

Even though the fight was so drastic, their faces were still calm with no special expressions. Their hair were flying, and so were their clothes. They were both unrivaled beautiful ladies. They looked like dancing in the air, and it seemed they hardly had any killing intent themselves.

However, as they had been fighting for such a long time with their full efforts, they were getting exhausted. Even though they had the capability to recover automatically, they just fought too

hard.

Yet neither of them was willing to give in. No one admitted defeated.

Back in the history, Xue Danru, the lady in white, was lower than Xuan Bing in the cultivator ranking of the Qing-Yun Realm, because she truly was not as capable as Xuan Bing. As such, now was the time for her to have this opportunity to avenge the humiliation, moreover, their sects had been enemies for thousands of years. They were bound to be relentless enemies. Now that they both had the chance, none of them would let the other go.

The lady in black, Xuan Bing, knew that she didn't have a long time to live anymore, so she figured that if she could kill her sect's most dangerous enemy before she died, the other people in her sect might have a bigger chance to live!

At least, if the super grandmaster Xue Danru died, Xue Danru's sect would definitely fall from the top range. It would be difficult for them to save themselves too, so they would surely have no time to think about dealing with the Misty Cloud Palace. In fact, if they fell too, the other sects might be interested more in killing them. That would release Misty Cloud Palace from the stress of dealing with all the other sects.

"Xue Danru, you are not my match. You know it. Why struggle? Just accept your death!" Xuan Bing spoke coldly.

"Heh, heh... I, Xue Danru, have been a virgin for my whole life.

How can I admit defeat to an evil woman who raped a young man?!” Xue Danru sneered, “You shameless slut!”

“You are asking for death!” Xuan Bing’s face turned totally red. She gritted with her teeth and cursed, “You paltry bxtch! You know nothing!”

Xue Danru sneered, “At least I know that a woman should cherish her good name and be virginal. I am not as filthy as you though!”

Xuan Bing was both angry and ashamed. She screamed to the sky and the whole land shook. She couldn’t stand it anymore. One of her sleeves suddenly exploded and its broken pieces suddenly flew towards Xue Danru. It revealed her extreme pale arm. On the arm, close to the shoulder, there was a [red Virgin Dot](#).

“Xue Danru! I am a virgin and I am clean! My reputation would never be ruined by a few nonsense words from your filthy mouth!” Xuan Bing’s voice was cold like ice, “Well, you, the Chieftain Xue, who is said to be promiscuous, what makes you think you have the right to speak the word virginal!”

Xue Danru humphed and the bent blade in her hand flew out. The blade breath it created was like a dragon getting over Xuan Bing from all sides. At the same time, her right sleeve exploded. She also showed a pale and elegant arm with a red dot!

“There are so many rumors in the Qing-Yun Realm. Most of them are lies. I truly haven’t thought that the admiring Grandmaster

Xuan would actually believe such a lie. And you actually insulted me because of such rumors... You are virginal and elegant, but what makes you think I should be worse than you? At least I have never taken off any young man's clothes!"

A surprised expression showed up in Xuan Bing's eyes for an instant. She just ignored Xue Danru's sneering and she just said blandly, "Xue Danru, I truly cannot believe that you are actually so courageous to maintain your virtue. There are so many heroes in the Qing-Yun Realm. Why? None of them can get into your heart?"

While speaking, she didn't rest her hands. The narrow long sword in her hand instantly released thousands of glows in flower shape. It cut the space and all the attacks were getting over to Xue Danru from all directions.

It was an attack that had an extremely wide area of effect!

Xue Danru's eyes lit up and the little bent blade in her hand suddenly started to spin. And then it got off her hand and emitted golden glows. All of a sudden, it became a huge bent blade that was no less than 100 meters long. It destroyed all the attacks from Xuan Bing's sword. And then it struck down from the sky fiercely!

That was a super powerful attack! Wherever the blade went, black fissure appeared. There were streams of cyan smoke appearing at the edges of the black fissure!

It was actually so fast that the space was burned because of it!

She said blandly, “What you called heroes, they are nothing but a bunch of filthy men. In the whole universe, no one deserves to be with me!”

She sounded indifferent, yet it was so convincing because of the pride in her voice!

She looked at Xuan Bing while sneering, “I am not like you! Hey, hey. That is true. You are still a virgin. But if I didn’t shout at you, you should have lost your virginity already. You actually came down to the mortal world to find somebody to sleep with. You actually intended to rape a young man to release your animal desire... Hah, hah... Grandmaster Xuan, I truly am impressed today.”

As she was speaking, she didn’t stop attacking, “Well, I am not a match to you on such a point though. I don’t think I will be a match to you in my whole life. No. The next life, the life after the next life, all the lives to come, I will never be as good as you on such a thing.”

Xue Danru shouldn’t be so annoyingly talkative even though they were enemies. She kept insulting Xuan Bing on her shame. The fact was that they had both been virgins for their whole lives. Xue Danru had been a virgin for her whole life even though there were so many rumors about how she was a slut. Xuan Bing had always been proud about keeping her virginity, and she naturally looked down upon Xue Danru, who had a bad reputation.

In Xue Danru’s eyes, she saw that Xuan Bing actually did such a filthy thing on a young man. She was acting opposite to how

people had been praising her. That was why Xue Danru wanted to talk about it so much.

Xuan Bing's face all turned red because she was humiliated in such a way. She swung her long sword and it turned into a huge sword that was no less than 100 meters long. She threw it out fiercely shouted in anger, "Xue Danru, there are so many things you don't know about that. Why do still keep saying those nonsense words again and again?"

Xue Danru waved her hand and the huge blade spun. It suddenly turned into a crystal and gleamy blade mountain. It fell down from the sky. She spoke blandly, "You think my eyes are only ornaments? I saw what happened. Why do you still want to quibble. No matter what, you have sharp and clever eyes. The young man down there is pretty. He has a good look with tall and straight body. His eyes are bright and he was full of yang aura. He must be a pure yang virgin. Such a guy is rare in the world. He will become some outstanding figure in the future. Grandmaster Xuan, you have such sharp eyes. I feel so happy for you."

...

Virgin Dot, (守宫砂) it is said that in ancient China, people used some special material to draw a dot on a girl's body. According to the records, it should be in red color all the time until she had sex for the first time.

Chapter 230: Nine Lotus Seats

Xue Danru paused and ignored Xuan Bing's red and frustrated face. She just continued, "However, there is one thing I don't understand... Why did you use such a violent way to get him? Why didn't you try to get him face to face? I think that young and naive teenager would be impossible to resist the seduction of the gorgeous beauty of Grandmaster Xuan. You actually took such a sneaky and violent way. That was truly the worst one..."

In her eyes, there was disdain that couldn't be covered. She continued, "Sister Xuan, how could you do such a filthy thing just because you wanted to vent your sexual hunger... I truly cannot understand why you would do it..."

Xuan Bing stopped explaining. She knew that she couldn't make it better by explaining.

And she couldn't tell anybody about the reason why she would have wanted to do such a thing.

The only thing she should do was to fight hard.

She kept her mouth shut. Her eyes were cold. Her attacks were getting more and more fierce.

"Sister Xuan, you are being so fierce. Do you want to end the fight earlier so that you can have time to enjoy the young man down there? If you really are so eager to shag your little pretty man... I can step away and wait... Let's say... Six hours. Is it enough?"

Xue Danru showed a concerned expression on her pretty face, "When you finish that 'thing' and enjoy enough, we go on with the fight. That will be the same to me. I am willing to help you with your sweet plan. I am not so evil after all."

When she finished talking, even herself blushed!

Xuan Bing screamed. She was finally pissed!

Her face was cold like ice. She struck her long sword again and it became a silver long dragon in the sky. It was swinging its claws and teeth rushing to Xue Danru. Its aura was shaking the whole world.

Yet all that was merely the beginning of Xuan Bing's attack. She swayed her sword again and again after that. One after another, sword lights turned into flying dragons. Dragons showed up one by one in the air rushing out crazily.

While she was ashamed and angry, she had used her power in an extreme level. Facing such a fierce attack, Xue Danru sweated. She tried so hard to defend, but she had no chance to fight back. At this moment, she showed her weakness facing the person who was stronger than her. She kept stepping back, and at the end, it was even difficult to defend for her. Yet she was still talking in a disdainful voice, "What? Did I hit the point in your heart? So you want to end this as soon as you can? Are you planning on dealing with me first before you deal with that young man... Hahahahaha..."

Xuan Bing didn't respond to the insults. Her pretty face was full of anger. The calmness in her eyes was long gone. There was only a flame of anger in her eyes.

The cold killing intent appeared!

The whole world became cold because of her killing intent...

The sword lights suddenly gathered together and became one huge flying dragon rushing out.

Xuan Bing's black figure flashed and suddenly rushed up. - Shoot!
- She shouted, "Nine Lotus Seats!"

Her voice was fierce and full of horror. The sharpness of her eyes seemed virtual!

Xue Danru was frightened. She kept defending with the long dragon, and at the same time, she was rapidly stepping back.

The Nine Lotus Seats was acknowledged as one of the most powerful move in the Qing-Yun Realm!

Once Xuan Bing used this move, someone must die!

Even Xue Danru couldn't be sure that she could defend against it!

A moment earlier, Xue Danru had actually insulted Xuan Bing to an extreme level. Xuan Bing decided to kill Xue Danru with a single strike. That was why she recklessly used such a horrible strike which could hurt herself almost as bad as it damaged the enemy.

Even though Xue Danru wanted to escape, she didn't have the chance.

Because there were also dozens of long dragons that hadn't been combined with the huge one getting over to her like a circle of wall entrapping her, they were like living dragons.

As she was a powerful cultivator, she could destroy any one of those long dragon sword lights easily with just one strike. However, if she did so, she would suffer the reverse impact from the dragon. That would make her stop for a second. And that was the problem. If she stopped even for an instant, it was enough for Xuan Bing to take her life.

Death only happened in an instant during the fight between two grandmaster level cultivators!

The only choice she had was to destroy all the dragons at the same time. That was her only way out!

However, it was extremely difficult to take care of all the dragons at the same time. There was a huge dragon flying around her. It required her full power to defeat it!

What a danger! She retreated, she died. And in fact, if she attacked, she would die too!

Xuan Bing's slim body was already in the higher sky. She was sitting cross-legged in the air. Her two hands made a lotus shape and then split apart instantly.

- Poof! - Nine huge Lotus Seats appeared in the air all of a sudden!

The scent of flowers suddenly filled the air!

On each lotus seat, there was a lady in black sitting straight.

They all looked the same with civility and lowered eyelids. They looked naturally distinguish and pure-hearted.

They were like crystal and clean jades that were flawless.

They were full of an untouchable aura.

The nine lotus seats were spinning slowly. The whole world seemed to stop running. The world was weirdly in a silent mode. Apparently, even the movement of the whole world was under the control of the Nine Lotus Seats.

Nobody could escape it.

While Xuan Bing was activating the Nine Lotus Seats, Xue Danru used her capability in an extreme level and finally destroyed all the dragons. She even destroyed the huge dragon that was equal to a full-power strike of Xuan Bing. However, within a short time, she surprisingly realized that the situation she was in didn't get any better. In fact, things were getting much worse for her. The air around her actually became dense like mugs!

She felt it difficult to even just move herself a bit.

As time passed by, the lotus seats were spinning faster and faster. Countless lotus petals were blooming one by one...

The scent of lotus in the air became denser and denser. It slowly filled up all the air in the sky.

Xue Danru had a quick reaction. She shouted loudly and burst her cultivation capability once again. Her slim body started to spin in a negative direction of the lotus seats. Her waist was so slim, and it seemed she would break her own waist with such rapid spinning.

...

Chapter 231: Internecine

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot... -

As Xue Danru span the first round, she wasn't used to it yet. However, when she span till the nineteenth round, she got it. She could already control herself. Even though she was still under the restraint of the lotus seats, she felt much better now.

As she continuously span fast, the sword in her hand became longer and longer. Eventually she shouted, "Slay The World!"

Billion streams of glow were suddenly emitted from the sword!

While the Nine Lotus Seats was the most powerful move of Xuan Bing, Slay The World was the most powerful move of Xue Danru's!

Since the two sects had been established, these two moves had never had a chance to be used against each other. However, at this particular moment, right in the sky of the Land of Han-Yang, they both used them.

When Xue Danru operated the Slay The World to fight back, the Nine Lotus Seats under Xuan Bing suddenly bloomed at once!

The scent of lotus suddenly filled up the whole world!

At the same time, it created streams of lotus blade one after

another with endless killing intent. They just filled the surroundings. Each lotus blade was actually followed by some traces of 'Dao'!

Only Dao was invincible in the universe!

At the same time, the nine Xuan Bing opened their eyes at the same time. The eyes were all full of cold glow. They all reached out their pale hands!

"Xue Danru, on my way to hell, there will be you going with me!"

There was a moving and tragic expression on her pretty face. At the moment when a billion streams of glow were emitted, her slim body rushed into the center of the nine seats like a flying moth darting into the flame!

All of a sudden, shadows of her pale hands were everywhere!

A few figures were flying over to her far away from the battle.

"As you are sincere like this, I cannot refuse it. Then let's go together!" Xue Danru said. And then she shouted, "Nobody comes!"

Yet there were still five people rushing over to her like they were possessed. They rushed into the center of the fight without hesitation. They just ignored the order from Xue Danru and shouted at the same time. They all started to attack Xuan Bing from all directions!

There were two of them who rushed over and stayed at Xue Danru's left side and back side!

They actually turned into dozens of phantoms and built a wall of their figures covering Xue Danru.

Xuan Bing had already known that Xue Danru had her people around, but she was indifferent...

She didn't change her move at all.

- BOOM! -

The two moves that were both famous in the Qing-Yun Realm finally hit each other.

h

After a few moans, the three cultivator who had just rushed into the center were smashed into dusts. They didn't even have the time to make a sound!

The two superior cultivators who were guarding Xue Danru were the strongest among all those people. They were trying their best to defend Xue Danru, and they actually successfully defended her for an instant. And then they were stricken back.

And then the biggest strike came from all directions...

One of the two cultivator, who was a middle-aged man, rushed out like crazy and shouted. He actually exploded himself. - Boom! - His entire body suddenly exploded into pieces...

His suicidal move actually defended the strike from the lotus seats for another instant.

The only one that was left smiled bitterly and turned around speaking to Xue Danru, "Without us... you will still be the same... But without you... we..."

He didn't even finish talking when the most powerful strike of the Nine Lotus Seats finally got to him. He shouted and tried to explode himself, but he was too late. The huge impact from the strike suppressed him in full range. He didn't finish his self-explosion. There were sounds of cracking coming out from inside his body, and he gradually got weak. Eventually, his entire body was broken into pieces...

"Without us... you will be the same..."

Xue Danru felt painful like her heart was being ripped apart. She shouted loudly and fought back like crazy!

- Boom! Boom! Boom... -

- Crack! - Both of their swords turned into pieces.

The Nine Lotus Seats were gone too. A mass of powerful strike spread out while they were the center of the spreading strike...

- Boom! Boom! Boom... -

Over a dozen of palm attacks from Xuan Bing struck on Xue Danru's body. Xue Danru shouted and opened her mouth. She spat out blood dozens of times. The blood turned into blood mist flying in the air. Inside her body, there came the sound of her bones breaking...

The nine Xuan Bing had returned to one. - Puff! Puff! Puff... -

Xue Danru's attacks were all struck on Xuan Bing's body too.

Xuan Bing opened her mouth and spat out blood too. There were also sounds of breaking bones from her body...

Yet she was still flying in the air and staring at Xue Danru coldly.

Xue Danru was more badly injured, yet she didn't show fear. She also stared at Xuan Bing with fierce eyes like she was going to eat someone.

They were actually internecine.

Neither of them had the energy to fight again. Both of their lives

were in danger at the moment. They could die at any moment.

However, even though they were in such danger, they were still unwilling to give in. The flame of hatred in both of their hearts didn't recede at all. In fact, it only increased!

Staring at each other for a long time, Xue Danru suddenly covered her mouth and wanted to swallow back the blood she was going to spit. Yet she failed. - Wha! - She spat it all out. Some blood was spat on her white clothes, and it looked like a red plum blossom on the snow.

She coughed and said weakly, "Xuan Bing... Why don't you use your Ling Xiao Ice Art?"

Xuan Bing kept showing a cold face and didn't reply. In fact, in her heart, she was helpless about it. [If I can use it, you should have been dead for a long time now. And I shouldn't be damaged so badly too...

How can I tell you such a big secret?]

Xue Danru nodded and said, "I will remember this! This intense and deep-seated hatred!"

She looked at Xuan Bing and spoke lightly, "If we can still be alive, there will be a day when one of us will die in the other's hand!"

She decisively turned around and used her last bit of energy to protect herself. She just flew out slowly.

At the moment, neither of them had the strength to continue fighting. If they both kept watching each other, both of them would eventually die. That's why Xue Danru was so hurried to leave.

The hatred was deeply planted in her heart!

[As long as you and me are still alive, there will be a day when I take your life with my own hands...

I will keep the hatred in my heart until the day I die!]

She slowly moved away for a long distance and didn't find Xuan Bing chasing her. When she turned around and looked back, there were no signs of Xuan Bing anymore.

Xue Danru's eyes was suddenly filled with the expression of hatred. She rushed to the boundless space without hesitation...

[Xuan Bing!

I will never forget you!]

Yet she didn't know that...

Right at the moment when she turned around, Xuan Bing had fallen off from the cloud even though she had been standing straight a few seconds earlier...

It had been a long time since she lost the capability to use the Ling Xiao Ice Art, because of the damage of the Heavenly Reverse Impact...She had actually used the Nine Lotus Seats forcibly with all the energy in her dantian. At this moment, she was actually in a worst situation than Xue Danru.

...

Chapter 232: Saving a Life

Xuan Bing was just forcibly standing up because she didn't want to show weakness in front of her enemy.

However, she eventually fell.

Right at the moment when Xue Danru turned over, she fell down slowly like a fallen leaf...

The blood that came out from her mouth not only stained her black clothes but also the sky.

After falling down thousands of meters, she finally came back to her mind a bit. She used the rest of the energy she had to keep herself stable. However, there was one thing that made her feel helpless...

She, as a super grandmaster level cultivator, actually couldn't even stop in the air...

She knew that if she kept falling down like that, she would be smashed in a horrible way.

[I have been virginal and beautiful all my life. How can I die in such a messy way?

Even if I will die, I should die in a proper way...]

She kept activating the spiritual qi in her dantian again and again because of such a thought...

She used up the energy again and again...

She tried so hard again and again and stopped for an instant before she rapidly fell again...

She repeated the same thing countless times during her fall...

Her long hair was fluttering in the sky. She eventually closed her eyes and thought, [I have been commanding the world, yet I am actually going to die here this time... In such a low realm...

I have had my inheritor, but I actually haven't talk to her about things after I die...]

She kept thinking about such things while listening to the sound of wind near her ears. She felt that the land was getting closer and closer to her... She was about to meet the end...

The end of her life...

The world-shocking fight in the air finally reached its conclusion. Whoever were involved in it all died or got damaged.

Other than Ye Xiao, there was nearly nobody in the world who

knew that such a great fight just happened there. The mortals were all frightened by the horrible heavy rain that would rarely happen within millions of years.

The rain was so in an upsurge. It was like there was a breach of the river up in the heavens, and the water poured out uncontrollably. If the rain kept pouring like that for a few days, the entire Land of Han-Yang would be destroyed by the huge flood. In fact, the lower places in the Land of Han-Yang had already been covered by floods. There were disasters everywhere.

Luckily, the people who had created such disasters finally stopped. The great fight ended, and the strange rain would soon eventually stop!

The rain was already stopped and what was happening at the moment was just the aftereffect. It will eventually return to peace again!

However, people didn't know the truth, so they were still in a panic.

The only person among them who knew the truth was kind of busy at the moment.

Ye Xiao was absorbing the water vapor with his full heart. The rain was still going on, yet the thunders had stopped. The two masses of shocking super energies finally disappeared. All these signs proved one thing. The great world-shocking fight up in the sky had stopped.

Since it stopped, the rain would stop soon.

In other words, Ye Xiao was losing the chance to absorb such a massive amount of water vapor...

How could he possibly slow down then?

Under such a situation, he naturally wanted to absorb as much as he could, so he stood in the heavy rain and tried so hard to absorb the water vapor...

He was so concentrated on absorbing the water energy. The wall of the Water Space in his Boundless Space were already full of water drops that were like blue gems.

- Ding Dong! -

Finally, one water drop fell down and hit the floor.

However, the floor inside the Water Space was rather moist already, and the water drop was a purest essence of water element, so it didn't break at all. It just rolled on the floor like a blue gem.

- Ding Dong! -

There fell another one.

- Ding Dong! Ding Dong! ... -

More and more water essences kept coming down from the wall to the floor. Ye Xiao heard the voice, and he felt like he was listening to the music from heavens.

As more and more blue water drops fell down to the floor, he felt so happy and full of joy.

He could feel that within every water drop, there was a great amount of life energy inside!

It was absolutely the water of life!

It was nutritious enough for all things in the world.

After getting on the floor, the water essences actually didn't mix together. Thousands of water drops gathered together on the floor, yet it didn't make any streams.

They were still blue water drops one by one!

It looked like there were countless of blue pearls piling up in the Water Space...

It wasn't some water in any normal form!

Ye Xiao was surprised and amazed by such a weird scene.

[The universe is truly full of wonders. There is actually such a wonderful scene in the world!]

While Ye Xiao was praising the amazing scene, he suddenly heard something above him. It seemed something was falling down.

He came back to his mind and looked up. He only felt like losing his sight as a black figure suddenly fell on him.

[This... Is this a woman?]

Ye Xiao had sharp eyes. Of course he instantly recognized it. It was a lady. She was facing down with her eyes closed, and she was covered by blood stains...

[It should be a seriously wounded... flaked woman who is in a coma.

But how did this woman fall down from the sky all of a sudden?

What is happening?]

Even though things happened too surprisingly, Ye Xiao still had time to react. He surely wouldn't watch somebody die without trying to help. So he stepped aside and pushed his hands. He

actually pushed the lady forward while she was falling fast in the air. It was, however, out of his expectation. She was falling down too speedily. Ye Xiao was dealing with it in a proper way with his full power, yet he felt his hands cracked. He nearly got his own hands dislocated.

He was frightened.

[If she is falling down because of unconsciousness, why is it so powerful?]

He felt himself lucky though. If he recklessly just reached his hands to hold her, he would not only fail to save the lady, but he would also get his hands injured. What he did by pushing her away should be the best way to save her!

He didn't have time to think about it any deeper. He had to save her before it was too late. He rushed forward and reached his hands under the lady's body and held her in the air.

Even though he had pushed the lady and made her fly breadthwise, the force the falling brought was just too much. Even though the way she fell was totally changed, it was still too powerful. No matter on which part Ye Xiao touched her body, she would die right away.

...

Chapter 233: Saving a Life 2

If he really wanted to save the lady, he had to lead the rushing power into a proper direction so that he could handle the hit.

Luckily, Ye Xiao was pretty experienced with it. He reached out his hands along the direction to which the lady was rushing away. Step by step, he was defusing the energy of the rush. He had been running almost six rounds in the yard, before he finally took care of the impact of the rush. However, a cracking sound eventually echoed out.

The lady moaned painfully and some blood was coming out from her mouth. She suddenly fell down.

Ye Xiao knew that something was wrong. [Oh shxt.]

He had done his best, yet he still couldn't manage it well. The lady's waist was actually broken at the end because it was too slim to bear the impact!

Ye Xiao had to be more careful. He held the mysterious lady and ran about five rounds more in the yard until he made sure that there was no impact left. He started to check on the lady.

Things happened so fast and he didn't have the time to think about it seriously. Now that everything was settled, he actually felt something soft in his hands. He was actually holding the lady with one hand on her butt while the other on her breast...

"No wonder I felt it so different..." Ye Xiao murmured as he got flustered.

A virgin accidentally touched two of the most secret places on a woman's body. Surely, the woman didn't realize anything. The feeling of the touch was still shocking Ye Xiao. He was kind of lost in the pleasure, and he actually felt a bit embarrassed.

His face was hot at the moment.

He hurriedly held up the lady carefully and entered his room. It was still raining heavily outside. Obviously, this lady was dying. If she got a fever or something, she would die very soon...

He put her on his bed and started to check on her body. Even though he was calm and steady, and also bold, he was surprised and frightened somehow.

The lady was obviously damaged in an extremely serious way.

Her organs were mostly broken or moved. She was bleeding like hell inside her body. The bones were broken on dozens of places in her body.

Her head seemed to be hit badly. There were two obvious palm marks on her waist...

"No wonder her waist would break just now..."

Ye Xiao sighed.

He had thought that it was his carelessness which caused the incident, but in fact, her waist had been seriously harmed already. Falling from the sky like that, she should surely have her waist broken. That was all about the current situation. It was lucky that he had handled it properly enough. If he had made even the tiniest mistakes, she might have become a pile of meat!

The lady was dressed in black. There were several places on her clothes that were broken. Her skin was revealed. Her right arm was completely shown. It seemed that the sleeve was ripped by someone forcibly... Her entire white right arm was in Ye Xiao's sight...

She was so thin and frail.

Lying on the bed, she was giving a feeling of wretchedness.

"She must be under eighteen... A young little girl... Must be at about the same age as Su Yeyue..." Ye Xiao was checking on her. He held his jaw and murmured, "What a pretty young lady. I kind of feel adored... What a shame she is in coma."

Suddenly, he was back to his mind, "Oh shxt! No way! The fight in the sky just stopped and this girl fell down... As she was falling that fast, she must be falling from about 6000 meters high in the

sky... Would it be... That the people who were fighting up there... She was one of them? Does that mean she is a super grandmaster level cultivator?"

As he thought deeper, he was more and more sure that it was possible.

He reached out his hand and touched the girl's wrist. He operated the martial art to check on her Jing and Mai. And then he frowned.

"That is impossible. Her dantian is completely empty. There is no inner breath inside it. Her Jing and Mai are seriously blocked. Her muscles doesn't seem qualified enough to handle martial arts in any way... She is apparently a normal girl who has no cultivation capability at all..."

He was shocked when he realized this.

He was a capable man. He could easily tell if a person knew any martial art or not by just checking their body.

The girl in front of him seemed to be just a normal person no matter how he checked on her.

He dared to swear to the gods!

It was one strange thing he realized, but there was another one. The fight should have been in the sky that was at least 20 kilometers high. The lady was rushing down quite fast indeed, yet

she should be falling from no higher than 6 kilometers high. So she shouldn't be one of the people involved in that fight.

Yet a new question came up to him. [Such a pretty young lady, who on earth hated her so much that they actually tortured her in such a way?

She was hit so badly.

Wasn't it too cruel?

And she was actually taken up to the sky and dropped down.

Does somebody want her to die without leaving any piece of her body?

The person who did this is... so... unbelievably vicious and cruel... and crazy!]

He felt so sorry about it all of a sudden. [Saving a life means boundless beneficence.

And she is such a beautiful weak lady.]

Even if Ye Xiao was cold-blooded, he couldn't just sit there and watch such a pretty girl die in front of him.

So he decided to save her. He grabbed her hand and carefully transferred some pure spiritual qi into the girl's body. He wanted to firstly keep her alive before figuring out what to do to make her recover.

The most important problem now was that the girl was dying...

Ye Xiao took out a piece of Supreme Pei-Yuan Dan bead and put it into the girl's mouth. Yet he found she was gritting with her teeth and he couldn't put it in.

He didn't dare to do it forcibly. He knew that he might instantly get her killed if he tried too hard. Thinking for a while, he made up his mind and kept the dan bead on his tongue and then delivered it to the girl's mouth.

He murmured in his mind, [Well, I am not taking advantage of you... I am only trying to save you. This is the only thing I can do... Anyways, when you wake up, you won't have the strength to beat me...]

He was stirring his tongue until he finally loosened the teeth of the girl...

He felt relieved and reached his tongue into her mouth quickly...

The dan bead got into her body smoothly. However, he nearly coughed to death after that, because a mass of blood was coming out from her mouth. After giving her the dan, the blood all ran

into his own mouth.

He then hurriedly turned aside.

- Pah! pah! pah... -

He spat several times and thought, [Well, people keep saying that the smell in young girls' mouths should smell good like flowers... Now I know that even a gorgeous girl can have a mouth that is stinky and gross when there is blood in it...]

The supreme dan bead melted at once when it entered the girl's mouth. It had become a stream of warm power that ran around the girl's body...

However, Ye Xiao was quite surprised... The Supreme Dan was making effects, but it wasn't working as well as he imagined...

...

Chapter 234: How About a Maid?

Even the normal Pei-Yuan Dan should be a marvelous dan for normal people that could bring them back from death. And he was using some supreme dan bead on the girl. He thought that it should moist the entire body of the girl once she took it. Even though it might not be able to recover her instantly, she should have been brought back to safety!

However, the truth was, within just a moment, the efficacy of the dan bead was used up...

And the most unbelievable thing was she only looked a tiny bit better... and that was all. If Ye Xiao didn't have sharp eyes, he couldn't have seen the difference though...

The girl looked almost the same like she had been. She was still in danger and would die in any second...

"What the hell! If I didn't check your body in advance, I would have thought that you were a super grandmaster or something..." He was self-mocking, "A supreme dan bead actually failed to save your mortal body. So weird..."

The Supreme Pei-Yuan Dan didn't work well on her, so it was meaningless to use it again. Ye Xiao took out two crystal blue water drops from the Water Space and put them into the girl's mouth with another Pei-Yuan Dan bead. The two things worked together, recovering her life energy and curing her wounds at the same time. Finally, she started to breathe smoothly.

Although she was still in a coma, she would stay alive for a longer time.

As something finally went right, Ye Xiao didn't want to slow down. He took a breath in and then put one hand on the girl's dantian while the other hand on her back. He operated the East-rising Purple Qi on both of his hands. Step by step, he finally put some pure spiritual qi into the girl's Jing and Mai...

It was still raining outside. He could clearly feel it becoming lighter.

When he started to operate the martial art, he instantly felt something wrong.

When his spiritual qi entered the girl's body, it was like a mud bull sinking into the sea. It just disappeared. He was frightened as he thought, [Was I wrong about her?]

So he checked on the girl's Jing and Mai again, but he still got the same conclusion. There was not a single piece of spiritual power inside her body. Her body was just like a rotting wood that was totally without a sense of life...

[That's strange.] He could do nothing about it. If he kept putting his energy into her, even if he used up his energy for a hundred times, it would mean nothing. So he made up his mind and thought, [I should focus on saving her life first and think about the other things later on.]

He transformed the power of the East-rising Purple Qi into two streams of pure energies. He didn't put it into her body slowly and gently like he had just done. Instead, he firstly concentrated the energies into one stream of spiritual qi that was narrow like a needle. He forcibly pushed it into her Jing and Mai.

He was repairing her Jing and Mai.

When he felt that he couldn't continue inputting his spiritual qi, he would feed the girl another Pei-Yuan Dan bead and the blue water drops so as to continue repairing her Jing and Mai...

He kept repeating the process for three hours and finally repaired her Jing and Mai.

Yet the girl was still in a coma. Her breathing got stronger though. She must be better at the moment...

The girl was getting better indeed, yet Ye Xiao was tired like hell. He sat on the side of the bed and took a few deep breaths. He was totally bathing in sweat.

"Oh my bloody god! I have never tried so hard to treat somebody before. And she is actually a normal girl who has never even cultivated. Why is it so hard this time. When I was only at the beginning levels of the Earth Origin Stage, I could cure the wound of the Golden Mai Palm for Uncle Song. I didn't feel so tired that time. This is really so weird!"

He couldn't think through it, but he only murmured to complain.

He wiped the sweat on his forehead and recovered his body. He swallowed some Pei-Yuan Dan beads too. The Supreme Pei-Yuan Dan was actually working well on Ye Xiao at the moment. Only two Pei-Yuan Dan beads could totally make him fully recovered. He then checked on the organs of the girl and fixed them. This time, he had used another five Pei-Yuan Dan beads and ten blue water vapors.

Ye Xiao only needed two dan beads to recover himself, yet the girl had actually costed him twenty dan beads along with a lot of blue water drops. That was over ten times consumption. What a huge gap between a person to another!

[She is obviously a normal girl!]

Even though he had used a lot of materials on her, she was still in coma. She just quietly lied there.

But her pretty eyelids had finally moved. She actually frowned. It seemed like she was still suffering even in coma.

That was a good sign. At least she wasn't a dying person at the moment; she was just seriously hurt! That was a huge difference!

Ye Xiao was happy to see that. He didn't even take a break. He immediately checked on the bones of the girl carefully and then

started to fix them.

It wouldn't work if she was still dressed. She had more broken bones than the good ones in her body. To fix them one by one, it was such a difficult thing. It was almost impossible. With her clothes on, that would be even harder.

As it was an urgent situation, he had to take off her clothes and he was okay with it. The thing that troubled him the most was that the broken bones were mainly in her important areas like the ribs, shoulders, waist and femur...

These areas truly made a virgin guy flustered.

After thinking for a while, he gritted with his teeth, "I am doing this only to save your life. I have to do it. I have no other choice. I am not intentionally taking advantage of you... Besides, when you get better and if you have nowhere else to go, you may want to stay and be a maid of mine or something... I happen to need someone to take care of my living affairs anyway..."

He was murmuring, "Then we will be in the same family. There is no point to be embarrassed about this..."

He sighed, "You are merely a normal young girl. All the things that I used to save your life... To price them all like they do in the salesroom... It should be no less than 10 billion... Oh god! I have never known any normal girl that was worth such an amount of money... Isn't my pre-investment too pricy? And I haven't counted the things I am going to use to fix your bones... If you don't serve

me well in the future, then it means I have lost a lot this time..."

"Fine. For my maid, I am going to do it anyway..."

He was murmuring while his hands were shaking. He took off all the clothes of the girl. Her white and exquisite body immediately showed up in his sight. It was so beautiful and elegant.

...

Chapter 235: How About a Maid? 2

Even though she was naked, she didn't arouse Ye Xiao's you-know-what thoughts. Instead, it gave Ye Xiao some feeling like... Like a pure white lotus was about to bloom. It would only arouse people's intent to protect it, but never to play it...

"So beautiful... I have never seen a woman's body that can be so good-looking..." Ye Xiao was shocked. He felt astonished.

Although wounds covered her body because she was badly injured, they didn't make her less beautiful at all. Ye Xiao could imagine just how shockingly beautiful she would be if all her wounds were gone.

"Cough... No wonder every man wants a wife..." Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts for a while. He realized that he had actually never seen a naked girl before this...

He was completely not experienced on this thing... He was merely a virgin...

So, he started to do his job from the girl's head to her feet. He actually told himself, "She is not a stranger. She is my maid".

It took him a long time to finish. He was busy until the noon of the next day.

Song Jue had come to the door once and shouted outside the

door. Ye Xiao didn't let him in. He just told Song Jue that he would get out soon. Song Jue just left and murmured.

After the heavy rain, there were many things in the House of Ye that needed to be tidied up.

As the steward, Song Jue surely had to be responsible for that. That was what a steward should do...

- Crack! -

After a sound, the last rib of the girl had finally been moved to where it should be. Ye Xiao removed his hands from the girl's chest.

The two things on her chest were shaking lightly... They were white and exquisite. They shocked Ye Xiao. He actually reached his hand to touch them. He just couldn't help himself. He felt their softness in his hands as he held them gently. His heart actually started to beat fast. Blood rushed up to his brain, and his face turned red all of a sudden.

"Ah... my maid... is actually equal to my woman..." Ye Xiao raised his head and tried to think about some reasons so that he could touch her again. After thinking for a while, he felt too embarrassed. He grabbed the quilt and covered her body.

He fed the girl three blue water drops by his mouth again.

Finally, he was relieved, "So, after about half a year, she will be fully recovered."

He had a good feeling about doing something right.

The girl was still in a coma. Her face looked much better now. It seemed like she didn't suffer too much now. Her face was still pale like paper, but there was a rosy color showing up...

It was certain that she could live.

She was just lying there with her hair covering the pillow. There were some hair covering her forehead. Even though she was seriously hurt, she still looked extremely beautiful.

She was like a sleeping goddess. It was so peaceful and pleasant.

Her pale lips moved from time to time. That made her look more delicate and touching...

Ye Xiao watched her like watching some extremely precious treasure. Finally, he stood up and stretched himself. His bones made some cracking sounds. He had been sitting there for a whole day. His bones seemed to have stiffened.

"She should be awake soon." He walked out the door and asked somebody to tell the cook to prepare some restorative food. And then he wrote a prescription and sent a blood guard to buy the medicines.

Song Jue came over frowning, "What happened? Are you hurt? Why do you need those medicines?"

"Not me." Ye Xiao smiled and told him all about it. Then he said, "The girl is still in a coma. This is such a strange thing. The person who defeated her must be a crazily powerful cultivator. But why would such a super cultivator hurt a weak ordinary girl viciously like this?"

Song Jue thought for a while but failed to figure out any answers. He frowned and walked into the room to check on her. He seemed satisfied and got out with his hands on his back. He nodded and said, "She is a pretty girl."

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "Of course she is. I am thinking that since she has such a powerful enemy, it won't be safe for her to get out from here when she wakes up. Her enemy obviously wants her dead. What do you think if I keep her on my side and make her my maid?"

"That is a good idea." Song Jue said, "Although she is seriously hurt and she is in a coma at the moment, I can still see that she is a good looking girl with such a pretty face. And she gives me a feeling of virginity. And I can tell that she must be capable of giving birth. She is really good. It is a good idea to let her serve you. And as time passes by, maybe you will want to marry her. That is not some serious matter. It is reasonable."

Ye Xiao smiled embarrassedly, "Marry her and stuff... Let's talk

about that later. I am not so sure if she will agree to stay in our house."

Song Jue said angrily, "Who gives her the right to make the decision? We saved her life. That means she is already ours. She has to agree. Decision made."

Ye Xiao nodded and thought, [It seems Uncle Song is more enthusiastic than me. She may have a complex story behind her. If she wakes up and refuses to be my maid here, it is also reasonable. If so... I will have to send her away secretly and not let Uncle Song know about it...]

He understood that nothing forcibly done was going to be agreeable.

[How can I force a lady to do whatever she doesn't want to... That is rude.] He thought proudly.

"Oh right. Your father has always been against you having a maid..." Song Jue suddenly frowned and said after pacing two steps, "But it was a long time ago. Now you are grown up. It is not a good thing to let you always play with your toy yourself... Hmm. It shouldn't be a big deal. Let me talk to him. Besides, this girl is really beautiful. It will be a shame to let her go... She seemed adorable. Even I feel adored..."

Song Jue made the judgment.

"Hmm. I feel the same." Ye Xiao nodded.

"So be it. I'll make the decision." Song Jue waved his big hand and made a conclusion.

With no reason, Ye Xiao was actually so happy that Song Jue actually made such a reckless decision.

So the mysterious lady from the sky had been sleeping on Ye Xiao's bed for two days.

She had been in a coma for two days...

Ye Xiao couldn't think of any better methods to take care of her wounds inside and outside her body. He could only clear her Jing and Mai everyday, and he also cleaned her body and fed her with some water or soup everyday. That was all.

While a person was in a coma, the body was still in need of doing something natural. So during these two days, he had been helping her do some embarrassing things...

...

Chapter 236: Expelled by an Egg

Sometimes, Ye Xiao would think, [The girl's entire body, there is nothing that I haven't seen yet...]

Except cultivating, what he did everyday was take care of this girl in black. Sometimes, he sighed in his mind, [I don't know which one of us is the maid at all. How come I have to take care of you everyday... Why don't you wake up?]

It was on the third night.

Sitting beside the bed, Ye Xiao was inspecting the girls's Jing and Mai, when the girl's eyelids suddenly moved a bit. And then they moved again. It seemed she was trying to open her eyes, but she just couldn't do it. She was trying her best. Ye Xiao could clearly see her eyeballs rolling lightly inside her eyes...

"Are you awake?" He hurriedly leaned forward and asked gently.

The girl's eyelids shook lightly. After a long time, she finally opened her eyes.

When she opened her eyes, Ye Xiao was dazzled by their beauty.

What kind of beautiful eyes did she have exactly?!

They were profound like the deep ocean. They were crystal,

charming and spirited. It seemed that inside her eyes, there was an entire universe... People would be lost in it when they saw such a pair of eyes.

"Are you awake?" Ye Xiao asked.

The girl opened her eyes slowly. She subconsciously blinked, and her eyes were filled with confusion. She looked at Ye Xiao with astonishment. And then slowly, there was an indescribable fear appearing in her eyes.

And then the fear was fully replaced by confusion.

And then there was only fear in her eyes.

She discovered that everything around her was so strange. Besides, it seemed that she was suffering a memory loss. She couldn't remember anything about herself!

[How did I get here?

Who am I?

What is my name? Where am I from?]

She had actually forgotten everything.

She tried so hard to speak, but she realized that no matter how hard she tried, she couldn't speak. She couldn't even move her finger.

In fact, she would feel a huge pain every time she tried to move.

The only thing she could do now was blink her eyes and roll her eyes.

That was it!

Her body didn't seem to be hers anymore. She couldn't feel anything.

[Who am I? How did I get here? Why did I become like this? I...]

There were so many questions in her mind, and she just couldn't find any answer!

Her eyes showed that she was getting more and more fearful. She wanted to talk, yet she couldn't. She could not even make a sound. She just looked at Ye Xiao confusedly with fearful eyes. And then she passed out again.

Ye Xiao asked her a few times until he realized that she was in a coma again. He felt helpless. He knew that she was still too weak, and she had no energy to support her body. So he started to work on it again. It exhausted him like hell.

The next few days were quiet and peaceful.

Ye Xiao had started making the Slimming Dan. The Boundless Space wouldn't make such a kind of dan though. Ye Xiao had to do it himself. This dan was only for losing weight, so it didn't matter if it looked good or not. Whatever Ye Xiao made would be more than enough to work on Wan Zhenghao's body.

There were some other good things happening though. The water vapor in the Water Space increased like crazy. That brought life to the whole Space. It had been only a few days since Ye Xiao had planted the seed of the Regeneration Ink Lotus to the Wood Space, but they had already pullulated...

The gelid qi the Cosmic Hades was releasing didn't increase anymore, instead, it was decreasing. It looked like the other Spaces were somehow suppressing it.

The Gold Space had gathered a huge amount of the Metal Essences. Wan Zhenghao had spent a lot of money to buy these materials.

[I have to say, it feels so good to have such a rich guy as my support.]

Ye Xiao turned emotional.

Within just a short period of time, Wan Zhenghao, that rich guy,

had spent over five billion to collect all kinds of resources like rare metals, precious stones...

There is a good saying in China. "Money can make devils push the millstone for you".

That was so true. It had to be a famous dictum. Before meeting Wan Zhenghao, Ye Xiao had to go out and look for resources. Now, with all the money in Wan Zhenghao's pocket, there were endless people standing in line to sell their materials...

Wan Zhenghao was just sitting indoor all day, waiting for these materials to enter his grasp.

Ye Xiao had to praise how useful money was. For people in the mortal world, money was truly something hard to resist!

Wan Zhenghao had once said something, 'I don't want to, but if I do, I can take out 10 billion gold to make a beauty contest in the whole world!

And only virgins were allowed to join!

Ling-Bao Hall would have millions of beautiful virgin girls to greet me in one day!'

Ye Xiao was surely disdainful. And what Wan Zhenghao proposed brought a heavy killing intent in Liu Chang-Jun's eyes. He stared at Wan Zhenghao for a long time with eyes like dead fish.

At the end Wan Zhenghao the rich guy was sweating with coldness and he escaped at once. Liu Chang-Jun kept staring at his back for a long time.

After that, Wan Zhenghao didn't even dare to meet Liu Chang-Jun for the following days.

Although what Wan Zhenghao said had exaggerated the power of money, but Ye Xiao had truly realized how big the power was.

Basically, in the mortal world, money ruled!

The egg in the Boundless Space was adamantly concentrated on absorbing the spiritual qi, the water vapor, and the qi from the wood essences.

However, whenever Ye Xiao entered the Space, the egg would just suddenly stop.

Sometimes, Ye Xiao felt that that egg was mad at him. Maybe it truly was!

It was doing it on purpose.

[Okay. You don't want to pay attention to me. Well, I don't want to pay attention to you either...

You are nothing but an egg, dude!

What do you think you are?!!]

Ye Xiao was indifferent about it. He just kept doing whatever he should do. Sometimes, when he was cultivating his soul, he did it beside the egg, so that he could take some energy from the egg.

He discovered that it was much more efficient to cultivate beside the egg!

So since then, whenever he entered the Space, he just sat beside the egg while cultivating. One man and one egg, they shared the resources.

The egg was rather angry about it though. In fact, it was suffering pain in its heart.

One day, when Ye Xiao was cultivating, he actually got expelled by the egg!

He got kicked out hard!

...

Chapter 237: The Poor Girl, Bing-Er

Ye Xiao was astonished. [What the hell! I just got expelled out of the Space by an egg! It is my own Space, dude! I am the owner!

And now you don't allow me to cultivate in my own place?

Fine. Wait and see.]

So since that day, Ye Xiao had cut off all the supplies to the Space.

Firstly, the Wood Space stopped operating, and Ye Xiao didn't put any treasures and materials into the Space anymore.

Most of the things he collected were stored in the treasure stock of the Ling-Bao Hall. And he just kept the others in the stock of the House of Ye. They were all kept in his own places anyway. He just didn't put anything in the Space anymore.

And he stopped cultivating in the Space anymore.

[You don't want me to cultivate in my own place? Fine. I am going to starve you to death.

I bet you already got used to absorbing huge amount of resources. I am sure you won't hold it long like this...

I want to know which one of us will be the one to give in first.]

A vicious smile appeared on his mouth like he was a treacherous man.

At the moment, a moaning sound came from his bed. The girl finally woke up again. Within several days, the girl had woken up several times. She still couldn't move herself though, and she couldn't talk either. She could only blink and roll her eyeballs. That was it.

This time, she was a lot better. She could actually make a moaning sound. That was a progress though.

Ye Xiao was happy, "Are you awake?"

The girl looked at him with confusion in her eyes. She was instinctively on the alert against strangers. She was fearful. Her lips suddenly moved. After a long struggle, she finally spoke, "Who... Who are you?"

"Cough cough. My name is Ye. You can call me Lord Ye." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Who are you, lady? What is your name and where do you live?"

The girl was still confused. She looked at him and spoke with difficulty, "Where is this place? And who am I?"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

[What? What did she say?

Did she just ask me where this place is? Oh! That is normal though. But the latter question?

'Who am I'?

You don't know who you are?

Even you don't know your own name, how can I know?]

However, she was badly hurt at the moment, and she could only speak with great difficulty, so Ye Xiao didn't want to offend her. He just rubbed his head and said, "What is your name? Do you... Do you still remember?"

The girl looked at him confusedly. Her eyes were actually like a child's eyes. She said, "I only remember that my name is... Bing-Er..."

Her eyes were so pure that they shouldn't be an about eighteen years old girl's eyes.

Her eyes were extremely pure and full of naivety. It was normal for some little kids, but... a seventeen or eighteen years old girl?

Ye Xiao was worried. He spoke in a deep voice, "Bing-Er... What a nice name."

The girl showed happiness for the first time in her eyes. She was happy that somebody praised her about her name.

"How old are you, Bing-Er?" Ye Xiao asked.

"I... I am six..." The girl felt sad. She tried so hard to roll her eyes. She looked around the room and spoke fearfully, "I... How did I get here... Shouldn't I be in the broken temple... I..."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[What?

What did she say? Does she even know what she's talking about?

Bing-Er? Six?]

Looking at the girl, who had to be at least seventeen years old and was so beautiful that she could enchant any man in the world, Ye Xiao didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

So he asked her a few more questions. The girl had forgotten everything about herself, except that she was only six years old. According to her own words, she used to beg for living. She was an orphan without parents. Nobody cared about her since she was a child. The only company she had was a dog...

Now that she lost the dog... she actually got beaten by a villain. The villain had eaten her dog... Before finishing the talk, she started to weep sadly.

It seemed that she had lost all of her memory after the year she was six.

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes. He was so speechless.

He couldn't believe that he had actually found himself in one of the most ridiculous situation in the world.

That was memory loss.

And it was a time-phased memory loss.

Apparently, the girl had lost most of her memory after being shocked, getting injured, and falling from a high space... She had met the end of her life and suffered a series of strikes...

Ye Xiao didn't know what to do and kept rubbing his head.

He was thinking about some realistic problem, [What should I do if I have to face the most charming and beautiful girl in the world... and she turns out to only have a six years old girl's mind?]

He didn't know what to do, so he asked Song Jue for help. Song Jue was surely no better than Ye Xiao on this. So they both sighed.

Song Jue stopped telling Ye Xiao to marry the girl.

He would be no different with a monster if he said so.

Ye Xiao sighed. There were numerous guys in the House of Ye. They were surely not careful enough in taking care of him. Now that a maid finally fell from the sky for him, he should be so happy about it. However, he was thinking maybe the truth was the other way around. Ye Xiao himself would be the one taking care of the girl.

He had no choice but to be a "male maid" for her since she was lying on his bed.

When he returned to his room, the girl was staring at him with big eyes which were so pure and clean. She actually felt happy when she saw Ye Xiao got in. Her eyes were full of dependence. She looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Brother, you are back."

Ye Xiao smiled, "Hmm. You are seriously hurt. Take care of yourself first. When you are better, let me take you out and play. I will bring you to see the goldfish..."

"Goldfish? What is it?" The girl was delighted, "I have never seen such a thing! Is it beautiful? Is it shiny like gold?"

Ye Xiao nodded, "We have goldfish in our yard. You can see them when you step out of the door. Be good. Drink the medicine first.

Good girl..."

He was holding a silver spoon and feeding the girl one spoon of medicine after another. The girl had swallowed two spoonfuls of medicine when she suddenly twitched her lips. Tears came down from her eyes. She spoke chokingly, "Brother, you are so kind to me... Nobody ever treated me with kindness like this... They just beat me up..."

Ye Xiao felt so sorry for her. He spoke gently, "Don't worry. Nobody will dare to bully you as long as I am here."

"Hmm." The girl answered him with a strong tone. She stared at Ye Xiao with eyes full of happiness and dependance.

She also felt that it was unbelievable. She was afraid that she would lose him.

After giving her some food, Ye Xiao took the dinnerware out. He heard the girl murmuring, "Am I dreaming... Such a nice bed and such a nice person... I don't want to wake up from such a sweet dream..."

Ye Xiao smiled but felt grieved about it.

...

Chapter 238: Misery Loves Company

It seemed to be a good thing for her to lose her memory though.

The girl must have been through some really tough years.

If she had lost all the miserable memory about her life after six, it would certainly be good.

At least she wouldn't need to go through any tough time in the House of Ye though.

At the very least, in Ye Xiao's mind, since she had been through such a miserable life, she hadn't learned much yet. So he thought that perhaps he could teach her something as if she was only six years old. Maybe she would acquire some great achievements in the future.

Ye Xiao sighed; it reminded him of his own previous life.

In his previous life, he was also a orphan... An abandoned child.

When his master found him, he was about the age of six.

He thought about what kind of life he had been living back then.

It didn't seem to be so different from the girl's childhood!

Thinking about that, he pitied her more.

He murmured, "We have been through the same misery. Let me take care of you for some time then. As for where you and I will go, I guess only the gods can tell..."

For the following period of time, the girl became more and more dependent to Ye Xiao. Every time she saw Ye Xiao, her heart was full of joy.

The injuries on her body were very serious. Both her inside and outside were horribly hurt. Although she should be able to live after Ye Xiao's treatment, she still had difficulty in moving herself. She needed Ye Xiao to help her with almost everything, including embarrassing things. Every time Ye Xiao helped her in the bathroom, she would always close her eyes tightly while blinking with her long and pretty eyelashes. Her face would always turn red.

She would be extremely embarrassed.

Ye Xiao always felt it hilarious. After all, she was merely like a six years old. Why was she so shy?

When Ye Xiao held her up and she saw her own chest, she was so surprised that she actually said something that nearly made Ye Xiao laugh to death.

"How... How... How come... Why is my chest so swollen... I don't feel pain..."

There were wounds on every piece of her body.

It was rather difficult for her to put on and take off her clothes. It would only increase the pain she felt, so Ye Xiao just kept her naked.

However, it was a huge challenge to him.

Every time he saw her, he could feel his blood rushing up to his nose.

However, he cursed himself in mind every time some "unfriendly" thoughts pop inside his mind. [How can you hold such filthy thoughts toward a girl who only has the mind of a six years old child!]

Sometimes, he even asked himself, [Am I the so-called 'weird uncle'?]

Every night, she would feel scared. She would always grab Ye Xiao's arms and would never let him leave. If he said no, she would cry. Ye Xiao had no choice but stay. So he told her some stories... As he was telling stories, he felt like crying to himself.

Imagine that he stayed with a gorgeous beauty who was naked, but couldn't do anything except tell stories.

"I know!" Ye Xiao spoke with tears.

It really wasn't a good job!

Sometimes, when he looked at the poor girl who was actually the same age with him, he felt that he was living a happy life. So was he in his previous life.

Thinking of that, he treated Bing-Er better and better.

He was so patient on everything even though they were boring. He tried hard to do as well as he could.

It was like taking care of the boy he used to be.

A girl who had nobody to depend on got badly injured and lost her memory. Under such a miserable situation, if she couldn't rely on Ye Xiao, who could she rely on?

In fact, except taking care of Bing-Er, Ye Xiao had many other things to take care of.

The auction in the Ling-Bao Hall was going to launch within seven days. He had to be more concerned about it. The assassination group that Liu Changjun had been building had recruited three hundred good men, and there were also countless external human sources.

There were several intelligence systems set up almost everyday. It was like bamboo shoots after a spring rain. At the same time, he needed to arrange all kinds of training courses and managing affairs. Everything had to be well arranged... And Liu Changjun was busy like hell.

Before they got busy, every time when Ye Xiao went to the Ling-Bao Hall, he could see Wan Zhenghao. Wan Zhenghao was the one who had the most free time there, even though he was taking charge. He talked rather than acted, and his men were all busy like hell all the time. For the recent couple of days, even Wan Zhenghao was actually losing weight because he was also so busy. The sweat that came out from his body could fill up a lot of buckets.

Thus, Ye Xiao just went and got the things that he wanted from the stock. At this time, it would only lower Wan Zhenghao's and Liu Changjun's efficiency if he kept having conversations with them.

And then he just went home and focused on cultivation.

The next few days, Ye Xiao had been cultivating in reality. And he discovered something good. After the heavy rain, it was getting hot. The hot weather actually created more water vapor for him.

The water vapor was actually the rain that was created by the two super grandmasters. If a super grandmaster in the Dao Origin Stage lost control, it could create thunders and lightnings, as well

as heavy rains and wild winds.

The fight between the two grandmasters earlier had changed the weather in the Land of Han-Yang. It had been raining for a few days. Luckily, they stopped in time. Otherwise, the flood would ruin the whole world, and it would become hard to live in this world.

At this moment, the forces that changed the weather were long gone, and the Land of Han-Yang was adjusting itself to a normal state. The water that remained on the land should surely return to where it should be. As it got hotter and hotter, the water became water vapor and spread along the wind. That was one of the methods that the land used to adjust itself!

Although Ye Xiao had already collected a huge amount of water vapor before, it was only a tiny piece of the whole amount of water on the land. The weather was hot, and the vapor was increasing more and more. Right now, he didn't need to transform the water into vapor anymore.

So it became much more efficient to absorb the water vapor this time. Inside the Water Space, there were more and more blue water drops on the wall.

Gradually, there appeared something like a spring mouth in the center of the Water Space. It was covered by lots of blue water drops. And there were countless blue water drops hanging on the wall too.

Ye Xiao was using every second he could to cultivate. He had a feeling that if he worked hard enough, he would very possibly enter the Sky Origin Stage in the next coming days!

...

Chapter 239: An Astonishing Gift

The peak of the Earth Origin Stage to the Sky Origin Stage seemed to only have a small distance, yet there was actually a huge difference between them. At least, for Ye Xiao, entering the Sky Origin Stage was the beginning of the cultivation life.

However, in the Land of Han-Yang, the Sky Origin Stage already signified the cream of the crop.

In Ye Xiao's opinion, reaching the Sky Origin Stage only meant starting to know a little about cultivation. That was it.

He could clearly feel himself making progress. He felt good and happy about it. After cultivating, he would usually go to see Bing-Er at once. He was getting used to taking care of her as he did it more and more frequently. Every time when he saw the trust inside Bing-Er's eyes, he could feel that the burden on his shoulder was getting heavier and heavier.

It was more and more obvious.

Experiencing the feeling of being loved and all these subtle emotions also made him feel good.

"That must be the warm affections in the world." Ye Xiao felt that his spiritual mind was improving. Even though he was gaining more and more responsibilities, he didn't feel tired at all. Compared to the solitary man he used to be in his previous life, his life was more realistic this time, and it fulfilled his heart.

"This is what life should be. Responsibility. Duty. Guardian. Meaningfulness. Goals. It is not only just for... becoming stronger. That would only make me feel lonely." Ye Xiao spoke to himself.

"If I only focused on becoming stronger and stronger, and if I only kill or do whatever can help me become stronger, then my cultivation speed would inevitably be faster... However... There will be no joys in my life."

"In fact, cultivation, love and affections... they are all the way we experience our own lives. The more substantial my life is, the more interesting my life will be. I think I should go on and experience everything so that I won't be lonely until I die..."

That was something he had recently understood. It was a new chapter of his mind trip.

In the next several days, Ye Xiao took care of Bing-Er's Jing and Mai to remove the obstructions inside which were caused by her injuries. And then he found something surprising. When he checked her Jing and Mai, he found that her Jing and Mai was so unobstructed.

There was no spiritual qi inside, but her body was naturally good for cultivation.

In other words, she had a very unbelievable physique!

No matter what she intended to cultivate, it would be very efficient.

Ye Xiao had never heard of anyone who had such an incredible physique.

For example, before Su Yeyue's body became the Phoenix Body, she was already a gifted girl. Without any help from any masters, she had actually reached the seventh level of the Mortal Origin Stage. It was already so rare. Even in the Qing-Yun Realm, such a physical condition should be part of the first-class physiques. All the sects in the Qing-Yun Realm would have been eager to have her as their disciple. Even Ye Xiao in his previous life couldn't be a match to her.

As for now, Bing-Er was actually a lot more gifted than Su Yeyue. At least she was far better in terms of physique. With her gifted body, it would only take her one day to cultivate the martial art that normal people needed to cultivate for a year. And she might even get a much better result!

That's why she was so unbelievable!

So Ye Xiao had a new job now. That was teaching her how to read after narrating her some stories. At the beginning, he only taught her ten characters at a time. And then he discovered that he was a bit looking down on the girl.

Although she had lost her memory, she still had an extraordinary retentive memory. She could remember everything she saw for the

first time, and she could even use it well.

Ye Xiao was surely happy about it. So he taught her more. Within the next few days, she was actually learning at the rate of three hundred characters a day.

That was an astonishing improvement rate even for Ye Xiao.

Within a few days, she could handle all the characters that were often used. It was reasonable that she learnt so fast though. Although she had lost her memory, she should have learned how to read before. That's why deep inside her mind, she knew how to read.

So she only needed to study a little bit before she could handle it well. It was more like reviewing for her though...

Ye Xiao thought about that and felt relieved. After teaching her about the daily used characters, he started to teach her the words about Jing and Mai and martial arts. And he discovered that she was also very efficient in learning these. She remembered everything so fast. She could even draw inferences about other cases from one instance to another.

Even though she was still in a serious condition, and she couldn't move herself well, every time she heard Ye Xiao's talks, she always showed a proud attitude while waiting to be praised...

At that moment, Ye Xiao would always feel so happy, so he

always praised her as she wished.

Another thing that shocked Ye Xiao was that even though she was in a bad condition and couldn't move herself, she started to try cultivating after listening to Ye Xiao. And she was actually able to sense the spiritual qi in the world after attempting for three days.

"I feel that... there are so many little living things in the world. They all like to rush into my body, but I cannot figure out where they are. I can't reach them..." Bing-Er asked confusedly, "What is wrong? Am I too stupid?"

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[Stupid? If you are stupid, cultivators in this world, including those in the Qing-Yun Realm, could go to hell because of shame!

Those little living things are obviously the spiritual qi in the world.

Normal people can only get to know their existence. It was all the same to 99 percent of the cultivators.

Whoever was able to sense their emotion must be the most talented cultivator. It should always take a long time before a cultivator could sense them occasionally.

And Bing-Er only spent three days to reach a stage that most of the cultivators cannot reach in their whole lives!]

Ye Xiao couldn't keep thinking about it anymore.

[What kind of body does she have exactly?]

He was very happy about it though. Since she was able to sense the spiritual qi, with Ye Xiao's help, she was recovering faster and faster.

Her wounds and injuries were being restored faster and faster.

Ye Xiao was so shocked about it!

[How can it be so fast!

That is ridiculously fast!

Did I find a precious person? Like a rare treasure to the universe!?)

...

Chapter 240: I Want a Fight

The only thing that was like a blemish in an otherwise perfect thing was that Bing-Er hadn't recovered any of her memory. Sometimes, when she was about to remember something and she thought about it, she would suffer a headache.

Ye Xiao couldn't do anything about it.

It was the auction the next day.

All the renowned forces were in the capital. All that had received the invitation from the Ling-Bao Hall had come.

There was a rather surprising thing that had happened recently.

The Room Sky No. 1 was booked.

Everybody knew that it was the most luxurious and valuable room in the Ling-Bao Hall. Only the most powerful and wealthiest man could sit inside that room. It was something known by all people.

The surprising point was that nobody knew who had booked it this time.

Even Ye Xiao didn't know it.

Only Wan Zhenghao knew.

That was the rule of the auction. Besides, Ye Xiao hadn't been to the salesroom yet, so he didn't have the time to ask Wan Zhenghao.

No matter what, it was certain that... whoever booked this room must be some extraordinary figure that nobody dared to ignore!

Whoever booked it should have a position higher than the royal family, the noble clans and the great sects!

Otherwise, Wan Zhenghao wouldn't keep it a secret like this. Even though he wanted to, he wouldn't dare.

Wan Zhenghao had planned to discuss it with Ye Xiao though. For ten days, Ye Xiao hadn't stepped into the Ling-Bao Hall even once. So Wan Zhenghao didn't have the chance to tell him!

The reason why Ye Xiao hadn't come to the Ling-Bao Hall for so long was that he was under a rather embarrassing situation...

Bing-Er was finally able to move. Even though her bones were still damaged, she could already manage to finish some of her own private business.

It was painful for her though. However, the sense of shame that every girl was born with made her want to refuse Ye Xiao's help as soon as possible.

"When I get better, I will serve you well... You are not the kind that serves people..." Bing-Er said with a red face.

Ye Xiao had to give in.

Even though he didn't want to stop doing it, he didn't have a good reason to object.

In order to release Bing-Er from pain, he went out to get some Bone Connecting Grass. He had bought nearly all the medical materials in every medicine store in the capital. As the auction was about to be launched, the replenishment of the medical stores was quick. It was the day one of those stores had promised Ye Xiao that they would get the medical materials he wanted.

Just a second after he got the Bone Connecting Grass, Wenren Chuchu got him, "Come with me!"

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose.

Feeling her killing intent that was cold like the blue moon, as well as her pride like freezing ice, Ye Xiao could only sigh. Holding the grass, he followed Wenren Chuchu away.

He had to go because he was facing a girl who was "on fire"!

However, under the suppression of the two ladies, he could feel

belligerence inside him rising up. There was a place inside his body that was ready to do something.

He was shocked.

"Master Feng." Bing Xinyue was still in a dress which was white like snow. She was cold and prideful, "Don't be offended if we are inviting you the wrong way."

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose again and smiled, "No. It is truly a beautiful thing that two pretty ladies invited me. I longed for it." So he said, but he thought, [The wrong way? Your disciple almost kidnapped me, yet I can't be offended? I do! I really do. So what?

I am not strong enough at the moment, but it is never too late for revenge. Let me just stay calm about this then. When I get over you two, I will let you know what 'a vile person that will take revenge all the time' is. I am not a vile person though. But I will take my revenge all the time, twenty-four hours a day! What about that!]

He was imagining something he felt good about, but on his face, there was still a big smile. He looked totally fine about everything.

Bing Xinyue was hesitant. She looked at Ye Xiao and didn't speak a word.

Ye Xiao was looking back at her with the appearance of Feng Zhiling. He was acting humble and honest. He didn't talk either.

They just looked at each other for a long time. Nobody knew what they were thinking about. Things became silent all of a sudden.

Wenren Chuchu was beside them. Suddenly, she turned mad and shouted angrily, "Why don't you talk?"

The angry shout was apparently towards Ye Xiao. Looking at Ye Xiao and her master look at each other for a long time, she was mad for no apparent reason.

Well, they kept looking at each other... For Wenren Chuchu, maybe there would be something special in their sights...

Ye Xiao was wronged and he said, "You dragged me here without saying anything. I am yet to find a clue why you brought me here, what do you want me to say? How am I supposed to know what to say?"

And then he acted like he was enlightened. He talked to Wenren Chuchu, "Oh right. Lady Wenren, you look so pretty today."

Wenren Chuchu was stunned. That was so sudden. And then she actually felt a bit happy in her mind. Her face blushed and she couldn't help answering, "Do I?"

Ye Xiao nodded honestly and said, "Of course. Your skin looks whiter than before. You must have put on weight again." He nodded and said with appreciation and certainty, "You must be.

Good to be overweight! Good to be..."

The way he looked, and the way he talked was like he was looking at a pig that he raised himself. It was like he suddenly found out that his pig had grown bigger. That was joyful though. Like he was saying, "Ah finally, you get fat. A little bit fatter and I can sell you for some money"...

"You!" Wenren Chuchu was so angry that her face turned pale. She gritted with her teeth while looking at Ye Xiao fiercely. She looked like she wanted to swallow him whole.

Ye Xiao nodded seriously, "I am always an honest man. Look at your waist, it got bigger. Not much, but... Hmm. What a shame... It would be great if it got bigger."

He talked with a sense of pity. It showed that he was unsatisfied with her waist not being big enough!

"I will punch you to death!" Wenren Chuchu couldn't stand it anymore. She rushed over and started beating him up.

Ye Xiao kept teasing her because he wanted a fight. Now he got what he wanted, so he surely wouldn't run away from it. Facing the fierce attack from Wenren Chuchu, he fought back at once. Instantly, they became two masses of whirlwinds rolling from east to west and south to north in the yard.

Wenren Chuchu kept her face cold and dark. The fire of anger

was burning like hell inside her heart. She was just too furious, so she didn't hold back on her attacks.

[Asshole! I am less than 50 kilograms! How can I be fat? I haven't really eaten anything for several days. How is it possible that my waist got big? And you actually said that it should get bigger! How dare you!"]

...

Chapter 241: Use You to Break Through 1

The thing that a woman cares the most was her appearance. And then it boiled down to the weight and the waist. Ye Xiao had actually offended Wenren Chuchu on both. That was certainly asking for a beating.

A while ago, Wenren Chuchu was a bit jealous. She just didn't think it would be appropriate to say it out. Now it was her chance to beat him up.

Her attacks were fast like the winds and heavy like the storms. From top to bottom, she used her fierce spiritual power to lock the space. Apparently, she was trying to prevent Ye Xiao from dodging away.

At the beginning of the fight, Ye Xiao was able to handle it easily. He didn't need to fight with full effort. One reason was that he had been so close to the Sky Origin Stage. That meant he was much improved than usual this time. There was another reason. It was that Wenren Chuchu's attacks were immature for Ye Xiao, even though her attacks should be almost perfect in the Land of Han-Yang. Ye Xiao could defend against her attacks with both his eyes closed. The Xiao Monarch had been through countless of battles. He used to fight a lot. He had seen so many outstanding attacks.

And Wenren Chuchu was merely a young disciple in the Misty Cloud Palace.

Practice makes perfect. No matter how good a martial art was, it

would bring different impacts in different people's hands. For example, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu, Ye Xiao could easily handle Wenren Chuchu, but he truly didn't have the confidence to deal with the much experienced Bing Xinyue.

It worked the same way if there was a fight between Ye Xiao and Xuan Bing, who was the prime grandmaster of the Misty Cloud Palace. Even if they had the same strength, Xuan Bing could play Ye Xiao as she wished. That was how experience could make a difference.

However, within a short time, Wenren Chuchu realized the truth. She knew that it would be impossible for her to take down Ye Xiao, so she changed her strategy. She waved her hand and her spiritual power spread out and became a huge net. The net was getting close to Ye Xiao from all directions.

That was an area of effect. It narrowed the space where Ye Xiao could move to. From outside to inside, apparently, she was using her spiritual qi, which was stronger than Ye Xiao's, to restrain him.

[I have a better cultivation capability. Now I am indeed taking advantage of you on this. So what?!]

Her little hands were full of power. They seemed slow, but in fact, they were extremely fast. The spiritual net that looked like a spider web formed an attacking area that covered everything around Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao had a sharp spiritual sensation. He noticed that something was wrong in an instant. And he felt that he was becoming slower and slower. The space around him was locked by a powerful energy. The space where he could move to was getting narrower and narrower. Yet he didn't panic at all. His eyes were even sharper. He was defusing the impact of Wenren Chuchu's attack bit by bit.

While he was fighting, he kept compressing the spiritual power in his dantian. He was trying to compress the energy into a minimal scale and then burst it at once. The compressed energy always made a huge impact. It should be able to break down a part of Wenren Chuchu's spiritual net.

In fact, Ye Xiao had a better option. If he used the gelid qi and the scorching qi at the same time, and then let it explode, it would consume less energy but a much more powerful impact. And if he used the Demonic Weapons at the same time, he could completely destroy the spiritual net for sure, even if Wenren Chuchu was stronger than he was in terms of cultivation capability.

Yet he didn't do it. He just chose to compress the energy and burst it out to create an area of effect. It could stop the net from restraining him completely.

Wenren Chuchu was happy that he did so though. [The more you burst your compressed energy, the weaker you will be after that. A few more times later, you will use up all your energy and you won't be able to restore it. My cultivation capability is much higher than yours. I can definitely fix my spiritual net faster than you can destroy it. It will tidy you up sooner or later.

And when that moment comes, you will be exhausted and you will have no choice but to give up under the suppression of my spiritual net.

Humph! When that moment comes, I am going to teach you some lessons!]

She made up her mind. Although she knew that fixing the net would cost more energy than destroying it, she still kept doing so. She even intentionally slowed down her attack. She just wanted Ye Xiao to burst a few more times and wait for the moment when Ye Xiao was exhausted. That was what she would love to see.

Ye Xiao was calm. He kept compressing his energy, busting it again and again. And he kept moving inside the space where he was still able to, so that he could dodge the attacks from Wenren Chuchu. Again and again, he was striking with a powerful explosion fiercely. As he had stricken more and more, his strikes were getting less and less frequent. Yet he didn't give up. Even though he was already gasping and sweating, he didn't give up. He just kept compressing every single piece of energy inside his body.

When Wenren Chuchu saw him like that, she felt soft in her heart. So she slowed down even more, so that he could have some time to rest for a second. Ye Xiao didn't feel grateful at all. He cursed, "You mad woman! You are overweight, yet you don't want people to tell the truth. I wasn't lying. Should I be blamed because I told you the truth? Where is justice? Besides, your waist has always been thick. Now it has just grown a bit thicker. You are used to having such a big waist. Why does it matter that it got a

little bit thicker? You haven't done a good job in keeping yourself fit. Why blame me? I should be the one who needs to wash my eyes after looking at you. And you actually got to me first!"

After hearing Ye Xiao's outburst, the flame of anger in Wenren Chuchu's heart once again burned like hell. Her face turned both red and cold. She was furious, so she attacked again with even more killing intent. It was so much fiercer now though.

Ye Xiao became busier in handling her attacks. Yet he didn't stop sneering, "Well, someone had their weakness pointed. Now you are angry because of shame, right? It is not your fault to have such an 'unsightly' appearance, but you showed up in front of others and it hurts people's eyes. Isn't it your fault? It is your fault and you actually started to beat me up... Ouch... Damn it. You actually beat me for real... No matter how you beat me, you still have a fat body and a big waist... Lady Wenren, you have to bravely face the reality. It is cruel, but reality is real. That is the gods' will..."

Wenren Chuchu was more than furious this time. She was so furious that it seemed that her hair were all standing up because of anger. She didn't feel tired at all, yet she was gasping because she was so pissed. Her attacks became so much heavier now.

...

Chapter 242: Use You to Break Through 2

Bing Xinyue watched the fight for the first few minutes, and then she stopped paying attention to them. Wenren Chuchu was much more capable than Ye Xiao on cultivation capability, however, Ye Xiao was doing much better than Wenren Chuchu because of experience. This was all about fighting will and practice. Such a fight was good for her disciple after all. In fact, she even hoped that her disciple would lose the fight this time. It would make whatever she learned unforgettable. The feeling of shame was close to bravery. It would be better for Wenren Chuchu to practice in a real fight. Besides, as they were both in a low level, even if any dangerous situation happened, Bing Xinyue could stop it right away. For her, it was merely a bout between two kids!

Other than that, she looked at how Wenren Chuchu was pissed to the point that her face had turned green. And then she looked at Wenren Chuchu's slim body which had a waist that was small like her hand. She felt pleased inside her mind.

Beautiful as Wenren Chuchu was with her face and body, if anyone called her fat, that person must be lying. Even a blind man wouldn't make that mistake. Wenren Chuchu must be the one who had the slimmest waist in the entire Land of Han-Yang.

[This Feng Zhiling actually made such an unbelievable lie. He actually called her fat and big...

That is a wrong way to piss somebody off.

Does he know that Chuchu is extremely mad at him at the moment.]

Bing Xinyue thought so, yet she didn't stop him. In fact, she was pleased.

She understood why Feng Zhiling did all these bullshxt.

She kind of liked Feng Zhiling now, because she knew what he was planning. He knew that he couldn't win this fight, yet he didn't give in. He even talked with bad words. Apparently, he was also trying to improve himself by dealing with Wenren Chuchu.

Bing Xinyue knew well that Ye Xiao could control both fire and ice elemental powers. If he used them both and made an explosion, it would be much more powerful than compressing his spiritual energy. Yet he didn't do it. That made his goal obvious.

Wenren Chuchu was truly angry this time. Suddenly, she clapped her hands and shouted, "I will teach you how to have respect in a really good way, you asshole with a filthy mouth!"

A fierce mass of cold qi suddenly came out from her body, and it seemed to be alive. It created vortexes in the air one after another. The number of the vortexes rapidly increased. Suddenly, all vortexes formed a long dragon that bound Ye Xiao's body.

The Ling Xiao Ice Art!

The primary martial art of the Misty Cloud Palace actually showed up in the Land of Han-Yang, such a low-class realm. That was so unexpected!

Even though Wenren Chuchu wasn't strong enough in cultivation and she could only use it in a basic level, the power this martial art brought was already marvelous. Her attack was at least three times stronger than earlier.

Ye Xiao was suppressed. Now the stress in his heart was big like a mountain. He was terrified.

No wonder the Misty Cloud Palace could rise again after collapsing.

No wonder it became the No.1 palace of the Three Palaces.

No wonder all the people in the Misty Cloud Palace still hoped that they could find the Regeneration Ink Lotus, even though they knew that the Regeneration Ink Lotus was dying out soon.

No wonder most of them still continued cultivating the Ling Xiao Ice Art.

The Ling Xiao Ice Art could actually improve one's capability three times in an instant!

That was an enormous impact. That was unbelievable!

What Ye Xiao was facing was the power that came from Wenren Chuchu. Wenren Chuchu was just in an average level. If Bing Xinyue used the Ling Xiao Ice Art, how powerful would it be?

If the legendary grandmaster, the guardian of the Misty Cloud Palace, Xuan Bing, used it, how world-shocking would it be?

The No.1 cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm, Wu Fa, had a great hostility against the Misty Cloud Palace for a long time. The hatred between the Misty Cloud Palace and Wu Fa was unsolvable. However, Wu Fa had always endured his hatred towards the Misty Cloud Palace to a certain extent.

That must be because he was afraid of the Ling Xiao Ice Art in Grandmaster Xuan Bing's hands.

Ye Xiao reckoned that since the Ling Xiao Ice Art could be so powerful in Wenren Chuchu's hands, if Xuan Bing operated it in full power, it wouldn't be a problem for her to bring Wu Fa to the grave with her.

She could at least make an impact on Wu Fa that was serious enough to keep him from recovering. That was a certain thing.

That was the biggest reason why Wu Fa didn't dare to attack the Misty Cloud Palace for such a long time.

That was reasonable enough!

Otherwise, he would never just let the biggest enemy casually live there.

Unless he was dumb...

A huge force was suppressing Ye Xiao. It became even more powerful as Wenren Chuchu's hands got nearer to him. He even felt difficult to breathe. He had a terrible feeling whenever he breathed.

That was a feeling that would only appear when he was totally overwhelmed in a fight.

Ye Xiao could clearly feel that the energy of her attacks contained some kind of special power that could affect his mind. Such power made Ye Xiao admire it. That was how it worked. It expanded the superiority of strength and brought about such influence in the mind, so that the enemy would just bow and give up.

This influence could make an impact on the deepest part of the enemy's heart. When the enemy failed, even if he did survive, he would still carry some permanent mental damage...

That turned out to be the most terrible thing about the Ling Xiao Ice Art.

What an unbelievable power!

Ye Xiao was decisive. He immediately squeezed his dantian and made a shout. Under the oppression, the East-rising Purple Qi burst out in full power. His dantian, which had been compressed since the beginning of the battle, instantly got loosened up! It suddenly burst!

His two fists struck out like storms. They were so fierce!

- Boom! - An explosion resounded. With Ye Xiao's full-power strike, a space crack had actually appeared. The crack only showed up for an instant, yet it still showed up indeed.

This moment, a mass of light purple energy was covering Ye Xiao's entire body.

Wenren Chuchu humphed and said, "How dare you call me fat?"

[Not enough energy...] Ye Xiao thought. He humphed and said, "Facts are facts. Justice will prevail. You are fat! Your waist is thick! It is like a bucket! I can't even see where your butt is! Do you really think that because you can act violently, everybody in the world would stop talking about the truth?"

...

Chapter 243: Use You to Break Through 3

Ye Xiao's talking ability suddenly became incredible today. He actually made irresponsible remarks in such a difficult level. Other than 'fat' and 'big', he actually made Wenren Chuchu sound like a violent woman!

Wenren Chuchu was extremely furious like something exploded inside her body. She screamed loudly, "Feng Zhiling, I will beat you up to death. Ahhhhh..."

While she was screaming, her attacks became even stronger.

The powerful impact of Wenren Chuchu's attack at the moment was strong enough to kill any Sky Origin Stage cultivators in the world!

- Boom! - Their energies fiercely collided against each other!

At this moment, something extremely surprising happened, that even Bing Xinyue was stunned.

The fight had been completely under Bing Xinyue's control until the moment when the two masses of energy collided against each other. After that moment, Bing Xinyue was prepared to do something to remove the impact that was created by the collision. Wenren Chuchu and Ye Xiao were both too weak in the eyes of a real superior cultivator. It should be easier to deal with both of their attacks.

However, at that moment, Ye Xiao suddenly drew back his pushing force. In fact, he actually gave up the energy that was covering him. He just took back every single piece of his power at once...

As such, the energy of the East-rising Purple Qi and the energy from the Ling Xiao Ice Art struck Ye Xiao like a flash flood!

[What the hell is that?]

One moment ago, they were both operating their martial arts in maximum power, so that the fight could end with a fair result. Wenren Chuchu was still young. She couldn't control the energy well enough to push forward or draw back the energy as she wished yet. It was easy for her to let go of the energy, but difficult for her to draw it back. So she had to let the energy of the Ling Xiao Ice Art rush as it was.

Bing Xinyue, who was watching, was anxious at the moment. She thought that she had everything under her control, yet such an incident was so out of her expectation! It was unbelievable!

To her, what Feng Zhiling did was simply asking for death!

Ye Xiao had let loose of his own cultivation capability in a maximum level. That was his most powerful strike. But just as he struck out his most powerful strike, he actually drew it back quickly. He would have to bear the impact of his own attack. Other than that, he would have to take the strike from Wenren Chuchu

at the same time. At this moment, it was like Ye Xiao and Wenren Chuchu worked together to attack Ye Xiao himself. And Ye Xiao couldn't do anything else aside from standing there to fully bear the brunt of the attacks!

Bing Xinyue was too surprised about what had just happened. She actually blanked out for a moment, so she didn't have the time to take action. When she came back to her senses and wanted to do something that might save Ye Xiao's life, another incident shocked her again!

Ye Xiao was firmly standing with his arms on his chest, like he was holding the whole world. He was actually observing the attacks!

Within an instant, he actually turned attacking into absorbing.

At this moment, Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai inside his body became a weird and powerful black hole that could absorb endless spiritual energy! All the energy of the attacks were being absorbed into his Jing and Mai.

The energy went through his Jing and Mai and then all of it went to his dantian!

- Boom! -

Even Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue could clearly hear the explosion from Ye Xiao's dantian.

That sound was like a bomb exploding thousands of meters deep in the earth.

It reverberated from inside to outside. It was ponderous but scary!

- Pah! -

Ye Xiao spat out fresh and red blood.

The blood was like an arrow. It actually got on the white wall that was about forty meters away, and the blood even painted a beautiful plum blossom on the wall.

Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue saw that and both their faces turned pale. They rushed over immediately.

"You... Are you ok?"

"You... How is it? How could you... not run away... And you actually tried to absorb it. You... You... You are asking for death, you know that?"

They asked him anxiously.

In their minds, what Ye Xiao did was asking for death!

[Even if your Jing and Mai are broad enough to let all the spiritual energy through, even if your dantian is weirdly strong enough to handle all the energy, you are still too weak. Your real cultivation capability is even under Wenren Chuchu.

How dare you strike out all your energy out and withdraw it with her power, which was much stronger than yours.

The energy that you struck out is big enough to reach the limits of your dantian. And you actually absorbed it alone with the energy from Chuchu. You absorbed the energy so forcefully. Even if you are lucky enough to avoid death, you would still probably explode from the burst of energy in your dantian.

Are you crazy?]

After spitting out blood, Ye Xiao closed his eyes immediately. The purple qi was surrounding him. He just stayed still.

The next moment, some sounds kept coming out from his stomach, and then it sounded like a pot of boiling water. And then his belly was quickly turning bigger and bigger.

Apparently, Ye Xiao was in pain, because his face turned twisted.

Yet he just kept his mouth shut. He didn't even moan.

The purple qi was surrounding him. The purple glow was getting brighter and brighter.

It looked like he was going to explode at any second.

Bing Xinyue frowned as she looked at Wenren Chuchu.

Wenren Chuchu's face was totally pale. She didn't know what to do. Tears were forming in her eyes. She spoke with a quivering voice, "Master... It... It... It wasn't on purpose... I... I... How is he? Is he going to be alright... Please help him..."

Bing Xinyue sighed and shook her head.

The incident happened too fast. It was too unexpected. Even though she was powerful, she couldn't do anything with such a suicidal action. She could only pray.

Wenren Chuchu bursted into tears. She spoke chokingly, "Master please, save him... Oh... I don't want him dead. I never had any thoughts about taking his life..."

Speaking the word "dead" made her feel an excruciating pain in her heart, like it was being cut by sharp knives.

The feeling got to her surprisingly. She herself didn't know why. She just felt extremely sad and it just wouldn't stop. It was some kind of depression and sorrow that made her whole world colorless.

All of a sudden, a sound came out from Ye Xiao's body. It was toneless but fierce. It was like a sound created deep inside his soul. They were both shocked.

That was the sound of... breakthrough!

It came from deep inside one's mind!

...

Chapter 244: An Incredible Breakthrough

A glowing circle bursted around Feng Zhiling's body like dust, but it disappeared quickly. And then a more brighter purple glow bursted out!

It was so bright that it made people unable to look straight at it.

The next moment, a blue glow that was like the color of the ocean suddenly appeared like fluttering waves.

It lit up the whole yard and filled the surroundings with the color of blue.

Ye Xiao opened his mouth and spat out some purple and golden blood.

After spitting out the blood, he started to recover. He looked like there was some saint light inside him.

There had been too many incidents in the day, one after another, and one higher than the other!

Wenren Chuchu and her master were both astonished!

They really had no idea how this unbelievable thing could happen.

It totally broke their common sense. It was so unbelievable, and at the same time, it was also so incredible!

He actually made a breakthrough!

He actually used such a suicidal method to break through the bottleneck and enter the Sky Origin Stage!

He actually broke through the last gap between the Earth Origin Stage and the Sky Origin Stage!

That was the most important moment of every cultivator in the cultivation path!

Reaching the Sky Origin Stage meant stepping into the stage of Superior Period!

Between the Superior Period and the Ordinary Period, it was the gap between ordinary people and superior cultivators. It was the true beginning of the cultivation path.

The blue glow shined again. And then it stretched back a bit immediately. Ye Xiao made a shout and rushed up to the front of the two ladies who were still astonished. He smiled and said, "Wenren Chuchu, thanks for helping me breakthrough."

Wenren Chuchu opened her red little mouth while staring him. She pointed at him with a white and tender finger and quiveringly said, "You... You... Did you just have a breakthrough?"

Ye Xiao nodded confidently, "Of course. Don't you see that I am already in the Sky Origin Stage. Come, Lady Wenren. Let's fight again."

Bing Xinyue felt relieved and smiled.

She was experienced in cultivation, so she fully understood why Feng Zhiling would do such a thing. She knew that she had been underestimating him. She had thought that he was using Wenren Chuchu for practicing, however, she didn't expect him to be so bodacious to do whatever he wanted.

He kept compressing the energy in his dantian and bursted it out again and again. It looked like he was doing it to defend, but n fact, he was preparing for an opportunity.

When that opportunity came, he would explode everything in order to breakthrough.

She surely knew he would do so, yet she didn't know that this Feng Zhiling actually dared to risk his own life for a breakthrough!

That was too dangerous after all.

Although she was fully aware of the whole thing, her heart was still beating fast.

She still felt scared.

She just couldn't imagine if something went wrong.

[How could he do that?

How could he be so bodacious?

Didn't he know that if he failed with such a method, he would suffer a lot and eventually die with his soul. He would be vanished at once in the universe.

By then, there will be no more lucky chance for him. Even though I am here and I wanted to save him, I wouldn't be able to!

There have been so many great cultivators in the history, yet I have never heard of anyone using such a method to breakthrough.

That is playing with his own life.]

Even though she had seen Feng Zhiling successfully upgraded, she still couldn't understand him.

To her, Feng Zhiling was a smart man, and he was a good dan-maker who had an honest and humble personality too... He just didn't seem to be a man who would take such a risk...

Bing Xinyue was lost in thoughts while she heard the sound of fighting. Feng Zhiling had just upgraded, yet he was already fighting against Wenren Chuchu again.

This time, he looked so vigorous.

Even though Wenren Chuchu was theoretically stronger than Feng Zhiling, she already felt restrained this time. She didn't dare to attack too fiercely. She didn't dare to use the Ling Xiao Ice Art and her mind was disturbed. She was failing.

While she was fighting, she was still lost in confusion...

Bing Xinyue shook and thought, [How could she not fail if she keeps fighting like this?]

When Ye Xiao met Wenren Chuchu earlier, he felt eager for a fight. Under the pushing of this eagerness, he felt that he might be able to reach the Sky Origin Stage through fighting.

He only needed a good fight to make great progress towards the Sky Origin Stage. However, he had felt that the spiritual mind of the lady, Bing Xinyue, had locked him up. He was a bit scared, so he didn't dare to do anything reckless.

He might have the capability to defeat Wenren Chuchu, but if he needed to fight against Bing Xinyue, he would definitely lose. Even if he was in the highest level of the Sky Origin Stage, he wouldn't be able to hurt even one of her fingers.

So he didn't begin the fight against Wenren Chuchu right away. He just followed her back to her yard.

When he got to the yard, he discovered Bing Xinyue was there. That made him feel better.

He could sense that Bing Xinyue held no hostility against him, and in fact, she had a strange aura to him instead. Ye Xiao knew that as long as he didn't go too far on the fight, he would certainly be fine!

So he intentionally teased Wenren Chuchu to make her angry. He kept infuriating her to make her attack more and more fiercely. He put himself under the huge pressure of Wenren Chuchu and kept compressing the energy in his dantian. Every time when he bursted out the compressed energy, he always kept a slight piece of purple qi inside. When the purple qi gathered to a certain extent, he bursted it all out under the pressure of Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue.

However, it was not enough, because the pressure from the two ladies was still lacking in killing intent.

Wenren Chuchu had planned to beat him up badly indeed, yet she never wished to take his life. Bing Xinyue barely brought him any pressure really. Ye Xiao had sharp sensations. He knew that she was just standing and watching. If there was anything too dangerous happening, only then would she take action.

Maybe it would be better if he wasn't that experienced. However, he was so experienced. He knew it well. No matter what he or Wenren Chuchu did to make a threatening strike, Bing Xinyue could easily halt it.

...

Chapter 245: The Impact of Breakthrough

In other words, no matter how drastic their fight was, they were still in a safe zone. They would eventually end up fine.

Bing Xinyue had known about Ye Xiao's plan and she wanted to support him as giving him a favor. In fact, what Bing Xinyue did was something all the great sects in the Qing-Yun Realm would do to raise their disciples. It allowed the young generations to fight however they wanted so as to acquire maximum benefits.

To her, the problem this time was that Ye Xiao wanted to get as close to death as he could. And Bing Xinyue was trying to prevent such a situation!

That was a huge problem!

Ye Xiao didn't want to let go of such a good chance. It would be too difficult to find another opponent that was as strong as Wenren Chuchu. He wouldn't want to fight against anybody who were weak, and there were really not many outstanding cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang!

So, Ye Xiao made up his mind and gritted with his teeth. He used the Enormous Absorbing Art to lead all the energies to crash on himself.

He did it forcibly.

[Bing Xinyue is powerful indeed. No matter what I do during the fight that will cause dangers, she can easily solve it. But if I do something to myself, I bet you won't be able to deal with it!]

As the Chen-Xing City was in a disturbing time, all the powerful forces were around the city. Considering the complex relations between every two forces, Ye Xiao might get himself killed because any reckless mistakes. At this very moment, it would be better to improve himself as much as he could.

Even if his improvement was just a little, it might still be enough to save him in the unpredictable dangers in the next coming days. And he actually had an opportunity to upgrade himself to the Sky Origin Stage!

That was why he would never have given up such a chance. He just took the risk and created such an incident during the fight. He drew back all the energies, which were three times over his limits, into his dantian in order to breakthrough the bottleneck to the Sky Origin Stage!

As expected, under the crash of such a huge mass of energy, the bottleneck was broken down!

In others' eyes, what he had done was obviously asking for death. If the bottleneck broke a little bit later, maybe his dantian, his Jing and Mai and his physical body would have been ruined first. Any of these three things breaking down would lead to failure and his eventual death!

After the feeling of spinning, he actually felt the whole world become vivid in his eyes.

Everything in the world seemed to be filled with living glow.

Every breath of the living things seemed to be cheering and rushing over to him.

He felt like his dantian exploded like a volcano. Endless spiritual energy rushed into his Jing and Mai. That was a feeling of abundance.

And then the feeling became like an explosion.

After laughing loudly, he struck towards Wenren Chuchu under the push of the power inside him.

His attack this time was totally different. During the last fight, he was losing badly. Most of the time, he was trying everything to defend against Wenren Chuchu's attacks. This time, he fought back fiercely. Although it wasn't a killing strike, yet it was fast and hard to be defended. That was a good fight. As he fought longer, he felt that the energy from his dantian was being released faster and faster. It felt like the energy in his dantian would never be used up.

Step by step, after the first strike, the yellow glow that came out during his movement slowly disappeared. What replaced it was the blue glow showing up along his movements. The blue glow showed up on his body. Gradually, each of his movement contained a bit of

that blue glow. It was like a profound blue ocean was appearing with countless sea waves hauling and getting closer from far away. It gradually covered the whole space and created a scene of a blue world.

At this moment, in Ye Xiao's eyes, there was solemnness. His strikes became sharp and decisive. The blue glow was brightening the ordinary face of Feng Zhiling. With no reason, even the face of Feng Zhiling looked charming in such a situation.

After such an incident, Wenren Chuchu had lost her will to fight when she saw Feng Zhiling do such a suicidal action. She didn't want to fight at all. Now she was forced to get involved to the fight. She was a smart girl. After looking at the man, who should have died under that suicidal action, actually survive and become even more vigorous, she understood why Feng Zhiling did that immediately. What he did was shocking and scary, but it was somehow reasonable. He just survived a great danger and got to a higher grade, so he wanted to fight against her so eagerly. That meant he wanted to stabilize his achievement of the Sky Origin Stage.

After looking at Feng Zhiling so close to death, but still survive at the end, she felt relieved. And she was happy to help him improve. So she calmed herself down and spirited up, preparing to fight as well as she could. She thought, [What a good opportunity to you. Since you have such luck, why don't I help you?]

As she calmed down, she felt less and less anxious. The feelings of joy and surprise were increasing. She stopped acting restrainedly and started to fight freely.

She even felt a bit proud and comforted.

[Under such situation, he could actually breakthrough and reach a higher grade!]

[Using such a dangerous and unbelievable method to upgrade, he could actually stabilize himself so quickly.]

[In the whole world, how many men could be as good as he is to breakthrough during such a fight?]

While she was fighting, she was thinking. She felt herself lost in it and she couldn't really help it.

At the moment, she looked up at Feng Zhiling's face that was serious. The charm on his serious face and eyes shocked her heart.

And then she heard Bing Xinyue's voice, "Watch out!"

The golden wind was so close to her face. Feng Zhiling had jumped up and flew in the air. He made 99 rolls in the air and every roll he made was striking some weird winds down to the ground.

The movement was so weird that Wenren Chuchu was shocked. The strikes of Ye Xiao went from left to right and from up to down. It seemed to be everywhere. No matter how she dodged, she couldn't completely avoid being hit. She shouted and she instantly

transformed into a dozen figures. A mass of cold ice showed up like a crowd of stars shining in the blue world.

The Ling Xiao Ice Art showed up again.

Wenren Chuchu was surprised. She was at the sixth level of the Sky Origin Stage, but she was different from other people in the same level. Whoever at the sixth level of the Sky Origin Stage in the mortal world had lesser pure energy than her even though they were in a higher cultivation level. In the Qing-Yun Realm, whoever was at the sixth level of the Sky Origin Stage would have pure energy inside them. That made a huge difference. The Ling Xiao Ice Art had made Wenren Chuchu's energy extremely pure. That's why she was beyond the league of the greatest Sky Origin Stage cultivators in the mortal world.

Even though she was yet to operate the Ling Xiao Ice Art in full power, it was still unreasonable that Ye Xiao was able to force her to operate it.

...

Chapter 246: The Unnatural and Incredible Martial Art

Wenren Chuchu was surprised. [He had just broken through a higher level. How come he has such a huge power?

Is the martial art he is cultivating much more powerful than the Ling Xiao Ice Art?]

She only had such a thought for a second before she started to think that it was a stupid conjecture. [Ling Xiao Ice Art is the best martial art in the whole Qing-Yun Realm. It beats all the other martial arts in the Qing-Yun Realm. How could he, a man from such a low-class realm, have a martial art that is better than Ling Xiao Ice Art?!]

On the other side, Ye Xiao shouted loudly under the suppression of the Ling Xiao Ice Art. He actually didn't step back. Instead, he fiercely moved forward, producing a much bigger pressure on Wenren Chuchu.

[That is truly abnormal!] She thought.

Yet she didn't know that it wasn't Ye Xiao's best strike yet. It was only for distraction.

Once he started with this movement, he needed to make some certain gestures to move his body in order to adjust his position. He wanted to regulate his Jing and Mai and then compress the

energy in his dantian so that his body would follow the movement of the spiritual qi in the world.

At the end, he would burst it all out, which was the final step of this attack.

What he was doing now was to accumulate the energy of the strike. All that he did was to dodge from the opponent's attack. In one hand, he would not be disrupted, in the other hand, he would not get hurt.

This strike had a name "Trapped Dragon Launched To The Ocean". The 99 rolls in the air made him look like a dragon making waves in the ocean and suddenly rushing out from the water. It rampantly kept spinning on the sea as it made huge waves.

When it rushed forward spinning, the sea seemed to be its weapon surging forward to the enemy with it.

When it was done making waves, the waves were already reaching the sky.

And then it would just rush forward!

Wenren Chuchu was looking at this with astonishment in her eyes. One after another, blue streams formed into a blue long dragon that was approaching her.

The dragon was actually as powerful as the ones she created

earlier by using the Ling Xiao Ice Art. Its eyes were vigorous, and it looked like a king descending the world with the aura that was looking down upon all of the world.

It was like a sovereign of the whole world staring at its people solemnly.

Its power seemed to contain the energy from the ancient time. It was invincible. Wenren Chuchu felt that she got hit badly, and no matter what she did, nothing helped her even a bit. Her power seemed to have disappeared. She flew away like a leaf blown by the winds before she had the time to stabilize her body.

After rolling in the air for several times, she actually stepped back several steps on the ground before she could finally stood still.

Her eyes were full of fear.

Even Bing Xinyue couldn't help but keep her eyes opened widely.

Wenren Chuchu lost.

For Bing Xinyue, it wasn't so surprising that Wenren Chuchu would lose. She already knew that it would happen. Wenren Chuchu was below Feng Zhiling on attitude, vigor, experience and all other aspects. At the moment, Feng Zhiling had just reached a new level, and his cultivation capability had just increased a lot. It was quite reasonable that he could defeat Wenren Chuchu.

Maybe he just took advantage of Wenren Chuchu's tiny mistake, or her disrupted mind, or even used his own powerful vigor to suppress her and took her down in surprise. It was nothing unexpected. It was all reasonable!

However, the final strike that decided the result of the fight. Although it still depended on their attitude, mind states, experiences, and in some ways, on their own real strength, Wenren Chuchu was still well above Ye Xiao in cultivation. Yet in such a fair fight, she actually lost it to a man who had just reached the Sky Origin Stage and was far weaker than her. And it was an ugly failure.

That was unexplainable!

The result was unbelievable.

Ye Xiao got to the ground slowly. He stood in front of the two ladies. He was polite and casual. He smiled and said, "Thanks for the help."

Bing Xinyue had already known what he had been planning. Even Wenren Chuchu understood it later at the end, so it was understandable to them why Ye Xiao would say so.

Bing Xinyue smiled, "You're welcome."

Wenren Chuchu stepped forward and asked with surprise, "How

did you do that? That suicidal way to breakthrough?"

Bing Xinyue was happy to know the answer too.

"I am a dan-maker. Things that mean death to ordinary people don't really seem so to me." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "There is a special martial art in my sect. It is called Robe Transposition..." He smiled with a complex expression and said, "As long as the opponent is weaker than me, I can use that art to absorb their spiritual qi and pour it all into my dantian. Even if I couldn't break through, the mass of energy would stay in my dantian temporarily until all of it is vented out. It is not a perfect way though. If I couldn't break through, the temporarily staying power would still hurt my physical body. I wouldn't get killed, but I would still be injured. For people in my sect, there is always a treatment to recover ourselves from that injury. When such a mass of energy works well, it always helps me improve to a new level. It is a tricky way to improve myself, but it saves my time after all."

Bing Xinyue was enlightened. She said, "I see. There truly are endless weird things in the boundless world. I didn't expect that there would be such a kind of martial art in this Land of Han-Yang."

She came to an understanding all of a sudden. What Ye Xiao said was reasonable enough to explain everything.

However, she was still shocked, "It is not a perfect way, but it truly is an unnatural and incredible martial art already."

Wenren Chuchu nodded in agreement.

It was fanciful. 'Unnatural' could be a proper word to describe it. Whoever had such a martial art, whenever he or she was about to get to a new grade, he or she could just go get a big fight.

It was better than most of the martial arts that required the cultivators to keep staying in their own places while cultivating in seclusion.

Some people had been staying in one place to cultivate for their whole lives and still couldn't get a breakthrough. What Feng Zhiling did was totally different and better.

It was quite a fierce and straightforward to forcibly breakthrough a new grade.

After a fight, if you broke through, then you broke through; if you didn't, then you didn't. It was easy and clear!

As for the injury, it was a problem after the breakthrough though.

...

Chapter 247: Finally Convinced

If such a martial art wasn't unnatural, then there wouldn't be any unnatural martial art in the world.

The most important point was that even if it failed, it wouldn't lead to a fatal danger. As long as the cultivator took some time to rest, he could be recovered. That was the most important and unbelievable thing.

In other words, the cultivator could operate such a martial art again and again.

"With that martial art, Master Feng, how long do you think it will take you before you could reach the Spirit Origin Stage?" Bing Xinyue cautiously asked.

When she asked about that, she was anxious.

She didn't really want to ask such a question at the beginning. After all, it was already so friendly of Feng Zhiling to tell her all about the secret martial art. As she asked this question, it would look like she was making inquiries of the secret. It was something forbidden between two different sects. However, this martial art was too powerful and outstanding. She could not resist the desire in her heart. So even if she knew it wasn't an appropriate thing to do, she still did it. However, she was afraid that Feng Zhiling would refuse to answer her or even get angry about it.

Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a second before he said, "Well, the

cultivation route is full of difficulties. It won't be easy. However, if things will all go smooth on my side, I may enter the Qing-Yun Realm within two years."

He knew what Bing Xinyue was thinking, so he just gave her the answer directly.

Bing Xinyue had her eyes lit up as she looked up at Ye Xiao. Her eyes at the moment seemed to be glowing brightly like a full moon in the night, coming out from the dark cloud.

The beauty of her eyes at this moment had actually shocked Ye Xiao.

Wenren Chuchu showed an expression of excitement too.

Ye Xiao spoke with a deep voice, "I can clearly tell the both of you that after being taken care of for several days, the seeds of the Regeneration Ink Lotus have germinated. If they all survive... There will be twenty-eight of them in total."

Bing Xinyue's plump lips suddenly quivered. The surprise and joy that suddenly happened to her made her feel like she was swaying. She actually felt a bit dizzy.

Tears almost got out of her eyes.

She raised her hands and covered her chest.

[Our sect finally has hope.]

"If things go well and I have enough materials, the twenty-eight Regeneration Ink Lotus will turn into about six hundred Regeneration Ink Lotus in ten years. When that day comes, I should be a third grade dan-maker. Then I can do better in producing Regeneration Ink Lotus, Regeneration Jade Lotus and even the Renascence Jade Lotus."

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "However, that would be the most that I can do for you... But I think when that day comes, with all the Regeneration Lotus I give you, you will be able to rebuild your lotus garden..."

Bing Xinyue nodded and spoke sentimentally, "That is true. Maybe it will take us longer, but as long as it is less than 20 years and our sect is still alive, the Renascence Saint Garden will be rebuilt at least half. At that moment, we will never be afraid of collapsing anymore."

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "What a shame. Lady Bing, you are not going to see the day coming for sure. Heh, heh..."

He was just speaking casually and indifferently.

What he meant was scary and cruel. He was saying that Bing Xinyue couldn't escape death.

Wenren Chuchu was worried as she said, "Brother Feng, with your help, my master will surely be able to see that day come, right?"

Ye Xiao didn't reply, instead he just stared at Bing Xinyue's face.

Her delicate skin was pale outside but red inside. Her face also had a perfect shape with calm and profound eyes, as well as two pretty eyebrows which were like two mountains.

Ye Xiao stared at her carefully. He was doing it boldly, and in his eyes, it was full of pity.

Bing Xinyue's face turned pale, and then it suddenly turned red.

She lowered her head. She had a neck that was like the neck of the swan. She spoke in a low voice, "Now that our sect has hope, I... I really want to see that glorious day come..."

Ye Xiao was surprised and said, "My lady, you are such a virginal lady that will never allow anybody to touch you. Don't you care about that anymore?"

Bing Xinyue blushed. Even her neck turned red. She was so embarrassed. [He said that intentionally. He was teasing me about what I said earlier. I... I have just changed my mind. I just want you to cure my illness. That is all. Why did you talk like I am going to give myself up to you...]

In the mortal world, she could still be considered as a young girl. However, she has grown up in a sect that strictly forbade the special relationship between man and woman...

She hadn't contacted with many guys in her life, not to mention facing such bold flirting.

She just couldn't handle it.

Wenren Chuchu said angrily, "Feng Zhiling, you... You... Are you trying to piss me off?!"

[My master finally changed her mind after all the troubled thoughts, yet you actually dare to tease her. What if my master changes her mind again just because of the nonsense you said?]

Bing Xinyue raised her head and looked at Ye Xiao. She spoke sincerely, "If the road ahead of us is truly that tough and it only allow a few of us to reach the perfection, then I am willing to sacrifice myself to make a bigger chance for our sect... I have a peaceful mind and I am too casual. I am not the kind that is good at fighting in the martial world. I am not a proper person to be the guardian of our sect. Since so, why not sacrifice me? I am well aware about that."

The blush on her face was gone. She spoke solemnly, "However, although there is hope for our sect, it will still take time. The bright future is far away from now. I am willing to sacrifice all I have to protect this hope until it comes true someday."

She continued, "My virginity is indeed precious, but there is something more important than that. I have no choice. I want my heart to be pure and also my body to be clean and virginal. But if I can't have them both, I will just keep the pure heart of mine. Why not just give up my body."

She smiled and said, "Besides, we just need to touch each other. That is all. If you have to relate it to losing virginity, it is a bit too over the top I am afraid."

Ye Xiao spoke solemnly, "That's right. That is the truth. I am really happy that you can think through that."

Bing Xinyue slightly bowed and said, "Thank you for your concern, Master Feng."

Ye Xiao spoke seriously, "Lady, you have such a broad mind. You are like the wind right after a heavy rain. I truly admire you. I will try whatever I can on this matter. My lady, I will do my best to cure your illness."

He finally felt relieved.

...

Chapter 248: I Am in a Hurry

Ye Xiao sighed in relief. [You have finally thought it through. If you are really stubborn and rather die than accepting my treatment, you are going to die. And if you die, when I meet Lian-Lian again, even though I will still have a clear conscience, I will feel uncomfortable.]

Bing Xinyue blushed and she said, "Thanks."

In her eyes, a vivid expression longing for life had finally appeared.

Wenren Chuchu stood aside. She was incomparably happy about it. She couldn't help laughing sincerely. However, when she looked at Ye Xiao, she felt worried.

She wasn't as ignorant as Bing Xinyue. As a princess who had grown up in a royal palace, she knew pretty well about the fights between women.

Bing Xinyue didn't realized how attracted she was was to a man. Wenren Chuchu clearly understood a man's mind as she had seen a lot of them. Bing Xinyue was so pure and virginal. That made her deadly attractive to a man. She was gorgeous and could be one of the most beautiful woman in all countries of the whole history.

What she had was the overwhelming and incomparable attraction.

[Would Feng Zhiling fall into it?

Would he...]

She was lost in thoughts and then heard Feng Zhiling say, "Since so, it is better to be done earlier than later. Let's get started as soon as possible. You know my auction is launching tomorrow. I can't afford to waste time at the moment..."

Bing Xinyue nodded, "Okay."

Wenren Chuchu's heart beated fast. She said, "I will arrange a room right now."

Ye Xiao urged, "We cannot be interrupted."

Wenren Chuchu nodded, "I know. You won't be."

It was the same room and the same bed where Ye Xiao and Wenren Chuchu stayed the last time. Ye Xiao entered the room first, and Bing Xinyue followed him with her head down.

The door was closed. - Squeak.- Bing Xinyue, who was inside the room, and Wenren Chuchu, who was outside, couldn't help quivering when they heard the sound of the door closing.

Ye Xiao didn't notice anything. He just sat down with his legs

crossed and then took a deep breath several times. He was gathering the spiritual qi inside his body. All of a sudden, he felt a sound in his head. - Buzz. - He got a feeling that was like ten thousand horses running all over the world. He felt good.

It felt like an energy that was never going to be used up. He felt absolutely confident.

He felt like he was omnipotent at the moment.

He took a breath out. He knew that such a feeling was from his confidence. And that confidence came from breaking through the next level. That was a feeling of arriviste.

If he really thought that he was omnipotent, he would be screwed up sooner or later. He might even die because of it.

However, he shouldn't just let such a feeling go immediately. He should raise his confidence bit by bit every time when he had such a feeling. That was something overwhelming, even though he wasn't really that powerful.

He just wanted to take the quintessence and dump the wastes. He wanted to get rid of the arrogant part and keep the confident part.

Only by doing that could he keep the confidence that he had every time he broke through. He would keep the confidence bit by bit deep in his heart while waiting for the day when he returned to the position of the monarch; at that time, the confidence hidden in

his heart would burst into a world-shocking, universe-shocking... "vigor".

And this "vigor" would become unique. It would help him conquer his enemy without a real fight. It would bring him no harm but only superiority.

In front of the successful people, ordinary people would always feel inferior. It wasn't because the successful people would intentionally put on airs, but it was just because people naturally felt the strong vigor from these people.

Those people had experienced success so many times, that they would naturally carry the overwhelming vigor.

Bing Xinyue stood there silently. As she stared at Ye Xiao, her face turned redder and redder. All she was thinking was the three words: skin to skin...

Ye Xiao opened his eyes and said, "Better get it done sooner than later. We can start now."

He was speaking with indifference, but in fact, he actually felt excited and wishful in his heart. The last time when he was treating Wenren Chuchu, he got profits. At that time, Wenren Chuchu was not doing great in cultivation, so he didn't gain a lot.

Bing Xinyue was different. Her cultivation was pure. She was much better and had a higher cultivation capability. It might take

Ye Xiao a long time to complete the treatment on her. Well, the longer it took to cure her, the more profits he would get.

Ye Xiao was still showing the indifference and calmness on his face, yet on the corners of his mouth, there was a special smile which contained a sense of longing.

He probably didn't know that what he was thinking at the moment would piss ninety-nine percent of all the men in the world if they knew about it. And they would spit on him.

And everybody would be speechless about his thoughts.

Facing such a gorgeous and beautiful lady who was dramatically wonderful, when she was taking off her clothes and revealing her delicate and marvelous skin to him, what he thought about was actually "I am going to improve myself again"...

That would surely make people want to spit out blood. [Are you... a man?

Don't you dare call yourself a man!

If you are a man, how can you have such stupid thoughts?]

Bing Xinyue heard Ye Xiao and she quivered again. Her face turned completely red. Even her neck was red at the moment. She said anxiously, "Now?"

Ye Xiao said surprisedly, "If not, when? Do you think you still have a lot of time? I am in a hurry myself anyway. Let's just get it done to solve all the mess right away."

Bing Xinyue blushed and said, "I... I am a bit embarrassed..."

Ye Xiao was surprised, "I thought you are open-minded. So you are only talking like you are an open-minded lady? How is this embarrassing you? You just need to take off your skirt and reveal your dantian and your back. And I only need to put my hands on them. That is all. What is so embarrassing?"

Bing Xinyue suddenly felt like her face was on fire. [Really? How easy did those words slip out of your mouth. Reveal my dantian? My back? Not so embarrassing?

Well... Whatever's left are things I don't need to show to you?

And you actually said, 'only need to'...

You are asking me how embarrassing it should be?

It is extremely embarrassing!

Humph...]

She was hesitant and fighting herself in her mind. She lowered

her head and spoke nothing. She kept twisting the edge of her clothes and felt scared with no apparent reason. The man in front of her was much weaker than her in cultivation, and she only needed to wave her little finger to get him killed. However, she was frightened to an extreme extent.

"Come on. Take them off quickly. What are you waiting for? I am running out of time here." Ye Xiao was a bit confused.

...

Chapter 249: Solving the Illness

[You want me to take care of your illness, yet you don't want to take off your clothes. You are wasting time. Aren't you going to take them all off eventually anyway?

You were talking like you fear nothing, yet now that the real situation is in front of you, you are actually are resigning?

Is it funny wasting time like this?]

Bing Xinyue was bashful, angry and speechless. She turned to looked at Ye Xiao and saw the confused and impatient eyes of him. She finally understood one thing. [So... This prick even knows less about those kinds of thing than I do...]

Thinking of that, she felt relieved. In fact, she even wanted to laugh somehow.

And then she spoke with good grace, "Fine. You turn around."

Ye Xiao sighed and turned around.

He heard some sound of clothes being taken off, and then a special scent suddenly filled the air in the room.

It was a scent that was completely different from those on the ordinary girls. It naturally made people feel relaxed and happy.

And then the sound stopped. He heard Bing Xinyue speaking in a quivering voice, "... It... It is done..."

Ye Xiao turned around and his eyes turned looking straight.

He saw a beautiful girl who had an exquisite and delicate neck putting her two hands on her belly. She was nervous. Her upper garment was still tidy, and only the belly area under the chest was revealed. That was real white and exquisite skin on her belly. Well, the skirt was still on...

Apparently, she was trying to only show the two areas on her body that she had to show and cover the rest as much as possible. In fact, it revealed her perfect body shape even more, and it made her even more deadly attractive.

Her slim waist could probably fit an entire hand.

Being watched by Ye Xiao, she blushed, and the skin that she revealed seemed to turn pink. She spoke with a low voice, "Is this... okay?"

Ye Xiao coughed and tried so hard to suppress the heat that was raising up inside his dantian. He felt itchy on his nose. He said, "It is just about okay, I guess... The area on your back. I guess I will have to move my hand on your back to get to the right place. I will tell you when I am going to do that."

Bing Xinyue was extremely bashful. She said, "I understand. So..."

Ye Xiao said, "Let's begin quickly. I need to go to the auction. Better do it sooner than later. Seize the time."

Hearing that, Bing Xinyue was annoyed, and she almost felt that she should slap him hard on the face. [Such a gorgeous beauty stands in front of you while revealing her skin, yet you actually keep thinking about your stupid auction. 'Better do it sooner than later.' What are you thinking...]

She humphed and sat down.

She felt Ye Xiao was moving. And then suddenly, a warm big hand was placed on her back.

The warmth made her entire body mushy. She almost couldn't sit still.

And then another warm big hand covered her belly, the area where her dantian was located.

It was a sensitive area. She had never experienced such a thing in her whole life. She hadn't even thought about it, and now she was experiencing it all of a sudden. She couldn't hold herself up anymore. She moaned slightly as her body turned soft like a pile of mud falling back slowly.

Ye Xiao had been trying to calm himself down so hard. He was just about to operate his martial art... Suddenly, Bing Xinyue fell back for no apparent reason and got into his arms.

[What is this?]

He was surprised. He felt the body of the beautiful girl turning hotter. He was motivated. He couldn't help moving his hand up. His right hand moved up about the length of his palm...

He felt a soft and comfortable arc. It was so pliable and flexible. He couldn't help holding and grabbing it. He was a bit dazed, [What is this? So comfortable... So good...]

Bing Xinyue just fell back, and she suddenly felt that something was wrong. She struggled up, yet when she tried to get up, she was delivering her chest into Ye Xiao's hand... After her breast has been grabbed and kneaded, she suddenly felt dizzy. She was scared and embarrassed at the same time. She once again lost control of her body, causing her to fall back and bring herself into Ye Xiao's arms once more.

After thinking clearly for a few seconds, she suddenly jumped up. She spoke angrily with a red face, "You..."

Ye Xiao coughed and said, "Let's begin quickly. I don't have time to waste. We are doing the treatment here, not that kind of thing. Why are you embarrassed? Hmm. By the way, why did you suddenly fall to my arms? I... I... I was unprepared yet. Let's do it again."

Bing Xinyue suddenly felt like killing someone.

[You took advantage of me yet you actually blamed me. Do it again... Do what again?]

But on second thought, she remembered that it was true that she was the one who fell on him first. As such, she couldn't speak a word about it. She just gasped while feeling bashful and annoyed.

"Why are you still standing like a fool. Come on. Let's do it. Sit down." Ye Xiao said with a dark face, "We are really running out of time. Be quick, will you?"

Bing Xinyue rolled up her eyes. Her face was red. She sat down again with anger. She just sat down, and she immediately felt the warm hands touching her again, causing her body to turn stiff.

She felt the hands moving carefully on her body as a voice filled with confusion rang behind her, "Where is the dantian? Where is it..."

Bing Xinyue grabbed the hand on her belly and placed it onto the area where her dantian was. She couldn't bear her anger any more even though she had a good temper. She said while gritting her teeth, "You are already a Sky Origin Stage cultivator now, yet you actually don't know where the dantian is?! Here!"

Ye Xiao said, "Oh. Oh... There it is. Lesson learned..."

Bing Xinyue felt her entire body was on fire. It was hot. [What a prick. If I didn't grab his hand quickly, who knows where the hell he will reach his hand to? Such an audacious man.]

She wanted to accuse him more to vent the anger, but she was interrupted by a stream of warm pure spiritual qi that was released on her dantian. At the same time, there was a stream of cold qi on her back.

She felt like the front part of her body was about to melt, while the back of her body was about to be frozen and would never melt.

An indescribable feeling suddenly filled her up. She took a long breath out and thought, [Is this what they say 'through ice and fire'...]

The next moment, a stream of enormous power, which seemed belong to the outer space of the universe from the ancient ages, rushed into her body through the two hands.

...

Chapter 250: A Strange Power

The power seemed to be endless. It kept running without stopping. Within only a few seconds, it had entered an important joint of her body and had gone through her Jing and Mai. It was unbelievably fast and indescribable.

Bing Xinyue was different from Wenren Chuchu. She was an experienced grandmaster of cultivation. She had been cultivating the Ling Xiao Ice Art for so many years. She knew everything about her own physical condition, martial art, and Jing and Mai. The strange power from Ye Xiao was running fast, but Bing Xinyue still knew where it was going. The power had been through her Jing and Mai just after entering her body. It actually connected all the joints of the Jing and Mai and created a spiritual qi network in her body.

At the moment, the yin and yang, two streams of pure energy, didn't really operate inside her yet.

Bing Xinyue felt extremely terrified!

[What is this martial art?

How powerful is it?

It is actually able to control one's Jing and Mai within an instant!]

She had been confident about her knowledge of martial arts as she was truly experienced and well informed. Yet this strange and marvelous power was something that she had never heard of.

After the spiritual network was built, the two streams of energy, yin and yang, started to connect to each other.

The two completely different powers mixed together inside her dantian. It created a mass of pink mist rushing out from the dantian.

The pink mist contacted with the power that was from the ancient ages and actually completely suppressed the spiritual qi that was originally inside her. The whole process of suppression was finished in an instant.

Bing Xinyue did nothing about it. Her spiritual power stayed still. She was accepting the suppression. She felt the power rushing over through her Jing and Mai like it would destroy whatever stopped it.

After the first revolution, she clearly felt that her Jing and Mai had become more flexible. The dead cold qi that used to be in her body had partially vanished.

After she realized the pleasant change of her body, she was spirited.

[Feng Zhiling can really cure my illness!]

It not only works on Chu-Chu, it also works on me, even though I am in a much higher level of the Ling Xiao Ice Art!]

Thinking of that, she was more willing to accept the power from outside her body. She was feeling the strange power rushing inside her body again and again. Gradually, she relaxed herself. At the end, she didn't even think of it anymore. It was like she had given her life and soul to the ordinary man behind her.

It was bold to be like this. She was extremely reckless!

At this moment, no matter how powerful she was, as long as Ye Xiao did something with his spiritual mind, he could kill her in an instant. Besides, it would be extremely easy for him to make her a slave to him at this moment.

Well, apparently Ye Xiao wouldn't do such thing.

He kept operating his spiritual qi again and again to clean Bing Xinyue's Jing and Mai. The dead cold qi inside Bing Xinyue kept being expelled by Ye Xiao's East-rising Purple Qi, and after which, it was absorbed right away into Ye Xiao's dantian.

He was now sure that the negative energy inside Bing Xinyue's body was a lot more stronger than the one inside Wenren Chuchu. It was more than a hundred times stronger. And after the energy entered his dantian, it was turned into pure gelid power. After repeated of revolutions, this kind of energy had gathered into a huge amount inside Ye Xiao.

He was excited about it.

That was totally a silent achievement. It benefited others while it benefited himself. He was concentrated on absorbing the energy. At the beginning, he actually felt that the negative energy from her body was rushing into his dantian like tide!

It was only a tiny part of the energy inside Bing Xinyue... It was just a tiny bit of it...

If he drew it all out and absorbed it all, how much would it be?

And the negative energy inside her was only less than 0.1 percent of her real power!

Then how powerful was Bing Xinyue?

Ye Xiao thought about that and felt a bit scared.

Now he finally had a clear conception about her capability.

No wonder Jun Yinglian would value her that much.

Ye Xiao kept concentrating on operating the East-rising Purple Qi and absorbing the gelid energy. He was carefully removing the filth inside Bing Xinyue. However, after about an hour, he suddenly quivered.

He surprisedly sensed that there was another kind of power beside the gelid energy that he was absorbing. This kind of power had been hidden inside Bing Xinyue and had never been activated either...

At the moment, it was activated by the spiritual qi of Ye Xiao.

He felt bad about it. The newly activated power was getting wild. He had just made a little effect to it, yet it was already getting wild like mountains and seas.

His serene expression drastically changed. There was only fear on his face.

Bing Xinyue, who had been sitting quietly while focusing on the changes inside herself, was also scared and confused.

"What is this?" Ye Xiao drew back the martial art operation. The new activated power was out of nowhere. He didn't know how powerful it was yet. He didn't dare to take any reckless actions, so he just slowed it down and tried to figure it out.

While he drew his power back, that strange power actually followed the route of his power and rushed towards Ye Xiao. It only stayed inside Ye Xiao for a short moment, before it got back to where it used to be. However, Ye Xiao felt like his chest was hit badly by a big rock. Suddenly, he felt like his organs were all going to be torn apart. - Pah! - He spat out blood.

Bing Xinyue was scared; she stood up and asked, "What is going on? What is this power?"

Ye Xiao looked at her and couldn't say anything.

[It is from you... How can you don't know what it is?

And you actually asked me?

What the hell?]

They stared at each other. Both of them knew nothing about the sudden incident.

Bing Xinyue didn't even notice that when she stood up, Ye Xiao's hand fell to her butt...

She could only feel shock and confusion at the moment.

Even she herself had no idea why there was such a strange power inside her. She didn't know where this power came from.

"Who on earth..." Ye Xiao stopped before he could finished his words.

He felt that his conjecture was unreasonable and unbelievable.

...

Chapter 251: What Are You?

Bing Xinyue was quite a well-informed person. She instantly understood Feng Zhiling's idea, like she could easily understand a song by hearing a few tones. She spoke with a pale face, "I... I don't know. I could only feel..."

Her body lightly swayed again. Her entire body felt weak, and she couldn't stop herself from falling down into Ye Xiao's arms. Inside her eyes, there was a trace of fear.

She was just thinking about how horrible it would be if she was right.

"What did you feel exactly?" Ye Xiao held her body and hurriedly asked.

At the moment, Bing Xinyue leaned on Ye Xiao like she was almost paralytic. Ye Xiao held her tight. They were cuddling together. It was quite a suspenseive scene.

They were both lost in their own thoughts, and none of them noticed what they were doing.

"That strange power came out of nowhere. The moment you activated it, I just felt like... Like..." The fear inside her eyes was increased, "I was like... I was reminded about something. Well... Like there is something added into my mind... It is difficult to explain what it is. I am not so sure. When you stopped, that immediately vanished..."

Ye Xiao was speechless. He looked at her and stayed silent for a while, before he spoke with a hoarse voice, "Then I am right... That is it..."

His voice contained a deep sense of fear and a little bit excitement.

It was like there was a huge miracle in front of him.

Bing Xinyue looked at him and said, "Is it real..."

"Yes." Ye Xiao nodded affirmatively, "It is from your bloodline."

He stopped and sighed, before he slowly spoke with a heavy tone, "This, is the Bloodline Inheritance."

Bing Xinyue moaned and she nearly passed out. She said with sorrow, "Does it mean... That I... I am not a human?"

The superior cultivators who had Bloodline Inheritance were mostly the descendant of some saint mythical creatures or the most powerful spiritual animals. They were able to input the blood inheritance into their children to make sure their children would have a prosperous cultivation life.

When the Bloodline Inheritance wasn't activated at birth, only when the owner faced a fatal danger would it automatically

activate itself. It would boost the capability of the owner, so that the owner could escape from death for a single time.

In other words, it provided the owner a chance to survive some unexpected danger in the future.

The saint mythical creatures and those powerful spiritual animals were all infrequent. It was always hard for them to multiply. Some of them had to live alone for thousands of years.

Only the Bloodline Inheritance could keep them from dying out.

Ye Xiao frowned and thought for a while. He said, "Nothing is absolute. It may not be exactly like you imagine... In fact, human can do Bloodline Inheritance too. It's just that... whoever is able to do Bloodline Inheritance, he or she must be a figure that could shock the entire universe..."

He spoke with a deep voice, "Inputting the cultivation capability and experience into their children's blood as inheritance... That is something only those most powerful men are capable of."

He smiled bitterly, "The 'most powerful' I said, doesn't mean those in the Qing-Yun Realm though. It must be in some higher realms."

Bing Xinyue's face was pale. She said quiveringly, "If that person is truly that powerful and cares so much for his child, how would he abandon his child?"

Ye Xiao sighed and shook his head, "There are all kinds of issues in the world, and nobody knows everything. The world is full of strange things, and there's always a reason... The truth... We just can't have a certain conjecture..."

Bing Xinyue stared blankly for a while as tears dropped down from her eyes. She was suddenly filled with sorrow.

Ye Xiao sighed and asked, "Do you have parents?"

Bing Xinyue nodded and more tears were out.

Ye Xiao was speechless. He felt a bit sad too. He understood the feeling.

If she truly had a Bloodline Inheritance, then it meant that her parents were not her real parents. Then who was she?

Where did she come from?

What was she?

What should she do in the future?

"Are they alive?" Ye Xiao kept on asking.

If they were alive, he could find some clues about the truth...

"They passed away long ago..." Bing Xinyue was weeping.

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Then we have to find out the truth ourselves. It is better to be positive than negative."

Bing Xinyue said weakly, "But... I am... I am so scared."

To completely find out the truth, she had to fully activate her Bloodline Inheritance. After that, she would need to formally accept the inheritance. And that would lead her to everything behind her bloodline. However... she didn't dare to.

She didn't dare to face it. She was terrified. She didn't want to face it.

Once she inherited it, she had to accept the existence of a brand new Bing Xinyue. She would have to bear the new and unfamiliar identity of herself.

Everything that she had been through would become like a dream.

That was something she wasn't prepared to reach yet.

Ye Xiao asked, "What exactly we should do is up to you. I will keep it a secret."

Bing Xinyue spoke in a low voice, "I cannot make the decision yet. I want to... wait." She took in a deep breath and said, "It happened so fast, but I had my sensations. I can suppress the inheritance temporarily... You can go on absorbing the energy from my illness. You won't get a reverse impact from my inheritance... However, I can only suppress it for about three hundred rounds. So... After the three hundred rounds, you have to let me rest and recover myself. If we forcibly continue, we will be at the risk of getting hurt by the inheritance."

Ye Xiao said solemnly, "What you are suggesting is practical, but I think you should give it a second thought. I did feel the power of your Bloodline Inheritance too. It is unbelievably powerful and pure. I think it must have come from some extremely powerful people... Once the Bloodline Inheritance is activated, you can become one of the most powerful figures in the Qing-Yun Realm. Well, that is as long as you take good control of such inheritance power. You can even be invincible in the Qing-Yun Realm. It is something people can die for, but they just don't have the chance to even dream about it."

Bing Xinyue smiled bitterly, "I know. However, when I think about fully taking in the inheritance, it feels like betraying my parents in this life... They have lived a tough life just to raise me up, yet it turns out that I am not their real child... Once I accept it, it means I have chosen to return to my real bloodline... It is such a cruel thing to my parents..."

...

Chapter 252: Gentle

"I reckon they know about the truth. They know you are not their own. Most importantly, they are dead." Ye Xiao said, "What you are worrying about is completely out of reason. And it is too narrow-minded."

"But I know. I know they would never blame me. But I do." Bing Xinyue said, "Although they have passed away, I don't want to hurt their feelings even if they are in the underworld."

"I want to... get away from it for some time." Bing Xinyue finally told the true feeling that was deep inside her heart.

"I understand." Ye Xiao was comforted.

"Shall we continue?" Bing Xinyue looked at Ye Xiao and she suddenly blushed.

It was only at this moment did she notice that Ye Xiao's hand was on her belly all the time. Moreover, his other hand was holding her butt. More importantly, she was totally in his arms.

She remembered that she fell on his arms on her own volition...

With a shocked expression, she hurriedly got up. She sat on the side with her legs crossed. Her heart was beating fast. This time, she didn't feel angry.

...

The next six hours, Ye Xiao concentrated on absorbing the cold energy inside Bing Xinyue. When night fell to the land, he had only finished absorbing ten percent of the cold qi inside her.

It might be even less than ten percent.

The process was much harder than dealing with Wenren Chuchu's the last time.

Ye Xiao was sure that if he hadn't just broken through the Sky Origin Stage, he would never be able to handle the reverse impact of the cold qi inside Bing Xinyue!

"Let's call it a day." Bing Xinyue lowered her head and said softly, "You have worked hard for a whole day. There is an auction waiting for you tomorrow. Go back and get some rest."

Her voice was very soft. It was indeed in an indifferent tone, yet it was totally different from what she used to have.

If Wenren Chuchu saw this, her astonishment would have caused her jaw to drop down to the floor; her master could actually be so lady-like.

However, Ye Xiao was too dumb. He actually noticed nothing from it. He just nodded casually and said, "That's true. Okay."

Then he just stopped and stood up. He looked so leisure, and he seemed to act like he was asking for a punch.

Bing Xinyue was stunned for no reason. She then slowly stood up and tidied up her clothes.

And after a while, she just walked out in advance.

Ye Xiao was confused, [What? I was nearly exhausted to death to deal with your illness. You could at least say thank you, couldn't you? You just walked out so casually like nothing ever happened? You actually want me to keep it a secret for you. How stupid are you? Do you even know how to get along with people...]

Wenren Chuchu was cautiously pacing here and there with her arms crossed on her chest. She kept looking at the room with her furrowed eyebrows. She sighed several times, and between her eyebrows, it could be told that she was worrying very much.

Finally, she saw the two of them walk out one after the other. She rushed forward and asked, "How is it? Is it working? It should be, right? It must have worked..."

While asking, she kept looking at their faces. She kept asking with an anxious expression.

"Ah..." Ye Xiao sighed. He looked like the kind "I have tried my best but..." of guy...

"What? Nothing? How is it possible? How? It worked well on me. How come it didn't work on my master? Did you try your best? You didn't, did you?" Wenren Chuchu asked a lot again. At the end, she sounded like she was weeping...

"What? What did I say? I was just letting out a sigh, that's all. Did I say anything about how it didn't work? Why do you have to imagine the worst before figuring out the truth!" Ye Xiao saw Wenren Chuchu was about to cry out, so he didn't dare to continue making jokes. As such, he hurriedly explained. Wenren Chuchu liked to fight while she was upset, and he was weak after operating the martial art at the moment. He was unable to handle a fight against her at the moment. He was afraid that he would get punched so hard and nobody would help him because he started it!

"Ah? So it worked? That's great! Great! I knew it! I knew it would work. I knew it..." Wenren Chuchu laughed instead of cried. She was so happy.

Ye Xiao truly admired her. She used to be smart and mature, yet now she looked like a different person. [How can you be so emotional? Why do you have so much to talk? How do you do that?]

"It worked. That means it will completely solve the problem soon, right? It should be... Hmm. Since it did work, why did you sigh like that? You... You were trying to terrify me? Was it fun?" Wenren Chuchu thought about the possibility that her master would be completely cured. She was extremely happy, and she became smart like she used to be. Thinking about the man acting

on purpose, she immediately turned fierce to him. Ye Xiao would be punched hard if he couldn't explain himself.

"Why are you always so reckless? I sighed because of the true feelings from my heart. It surely took progress, but it wasn't the result I have expected. It was a lot harder than last time when I was doing it on you!" Ye Xiao hurriedly tried to make something up.

"Oh? How come? It worked perfectly well on me. How come when it got to my master..." Wenren Chuchu stopped feeling happy and she asked.

"Your illness was a completely different situation with your master's..." Ye Xiao smiled bitterly, "Your master is very powerful in cultivation. I cannot finish curing her in a short time. I need to do it several times, and it may take many days."

Bing Xinyue nodded and said, "That's right. Master Feng really has a particular outstanding treatment of his own. The whole process does take a long time though. It cannot be done within a short time."

After speaking, her mind blanked out.

She looked troubled, like her soul had gone away from her body. She was apparently lost in thought. There were tears in the corners of her eyes.

Wenren Chuchu was confused. [It is my first time to see master like this. There seems to be a lot of things in her mind. It shouldn't be about the man and woman stuff...

It is not about Feng Zhiling. It must be something else.

What is it then? What on earth can exactly make master look so deeply lost in the emotions? Wasn't she just experiencing the treatment? Did anything special happen during the treatment?!

Bing Xinyue said nothing about it, so Wenren Chu-Che wouldn't dare to ask.

...

Chapter 253: Bad Situation

Everything was done. Ye Xiao finally left. Things in the Ling-Bao Hall shouldn't be delayed too. On his way to Ling-Bao Hall, his mind was full of troubles.

The special Bloodline Inheritance inside Bing Xinyue was absolutely something extremely powerful. There was a kind of sharp qi inside that inheritance. Ye Xiao felt that, somehow, he seemed to have met it before... Maybe he used to know this power. However, he couldn't be sure about it. It was still a flurry mess inside his head.

In fact, Ye Xiao thought that it couldn't be possible that he had contacted such a high-class kind of power before.

It was greatly possible that such a powerful Bloodline Inheritance was not from the Qing-Yun Realm.

The Xiao Monarch had been one of the most powerful superior cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm, but he was still far from the strongest. He still had a long way to go to reach the top of the Qing-Yun Realm. Not to mention somewhere higher than the Qing-Yun Realm.

Then how could he recognize such power?

It must be an illusion.

He couldn't figure it all out the whole way to the Ling-Bao Hall. Maybe it was just truly an illusion.

When he arrived at the Ling-Bao Hall, he didn't dare to think about other issues anymore. No matter how powerful that Bloodline Inheritance was, it was something he should consider later. The priority went to what he should be doing at the moment.

Ling-Bao Hall had gathered so many powerful forces this time.

In fact, during his way to Ling-Bao Hall, he had been scanned by some other spiritual minds for thousands of times. If was right, all those spiritual minds were from cultivators who were beyond the eighth level of the Earth Origin Stage.

That meant there were no less than three thousand Tianyuan cultivators who had been casting their greedy eyes on the treasures in Ling-Bao Hall.

Those men were watching everything in Ling-Bao Hall, and everyone who entered or left Ling-Bao Hall. They were all concentrated in it. None of them wanted others to get advantages over them. They were all concerned about how much they could achieve in this auction.

They were like starving wolves with red eyes staring at everything that might concern their own profits.

Ye Xiao stopped and sighed inside his heart.

He sincerely sighed.

Half of those men were people from the Kingdom of Chen. They were all powerful cultivators who could defeat a thousand men or even ten thousand men. However, while the kingdom was in danger, none of them stepped out to help their home country.

None of them had ever considered doing something for their own country. They were all beyond the 'normal kinds'. None of them needed to worry about their daily life, yet all of them were greedier than the normal people.

Even when the kingdom was at war and people were living a miserable life, they never showed up to offer their help. Nobody heard about their names.

Well, when treasures in Ling-Bao Hall were about to show up, they were actually like hungry wolves smelling the blood and coming around, trying to snatch something for themselves.

After the auction, they would just disappear like a bunch of ghosts in the world full of fights. And they would never show up again.

"They only chase their own profits, yet think so less about their responsibilities..." Ye Xiao shook his head, "With great power comes great responsibility. But... They obviously haven't realized it yet. Since so, why not just pull as much money from their pockets as I can. You don't want to contribute, then I will use this

auction to make you do."

Ye Xiao made up his mind and then walked into the Ling-Bao Hall slowly.

The guards on both sides bowed, "Monarch."

Ye Xiao nodded and casually walked in.

Only by being called "Monarch", he had attracted countless attentions from around the place.

Monarch.

[It turns out that this is the true owner of the Ling-Bao Hall. He is... the person who holds a higher position than Wan Zhenghao, the one who is told to be super handsome and invincible man, Feng Zhiling.]

Ye Xiao walked in the hall and surprisingly found that nobody came over to greet him. But he couldn't complain about it. Everybody in the Ling-Bao Hall was busy like hell at the moment. It seemed everybody was running. Even Liu Changjun's men were helping here and there with sweats on their heads.

Everyone was busy. None of them had time to greet him. Ye Xiao walked leisurely around and found himself a misfit in this place.

Well, he had to get in after all. While he was walking deeper into the hall, he heard the echoes of some heavy steps. There were sounds of gasping, and there were also sounds of some small things colliding.

He knew it must be Wan Zhenghao.

The steps sounded like mountains moving. Nobody could make such sounds other than Wan Zhenghao.

Ye Xiao was thinking that even people who were in the Earth Origin Stage might not be able to make such heavy steps like Wan Zhenghao. At least the Xiao Monarch couldn't do it. Wan Zhenghao was too heavy. It was just too hard to imitate.

As expected, Wan Zhenghao's giant body popped up from one side. The path inside Ling-Bao Hall allowed six people to walk side by side. However, when Boss Wan was walking in it, his arms would usually clash with the wall.

It was making some sounds of friction.

The meat on his body rolled again and again while he was walking. It was so amazing.

Well, it was amazingly gross though...

Even though Ye Xiao had seen it many times, he couldn't help rolling his eyes up while looking up. He truly couldn't bear looking

at the giant fat guy moving with difficulty.

"Master Feng. Oh Master Feng. You came!" Wan Zhenghao rolled over to him. The meat on his face was jumping. It was even bigger than the ears of pigs. It quivered and rolled up to his head.

"What is wrong, Wan?" Ye Xiao said.

"Well, we are under a terrible situation at the moment..." Wan Zhenghao was showing a bitter face, "We are busy like hell. And those men, they are haunting us like hell. The two super sects directly came to me and asked me to save some supreme dan beads for them. And the eight noble clans came to me too. They didn't ask for anything specific, but I think they wanted the same thing."

"The two super sects?" Ye Xiao's face turned dark, "What super sects?"

...

Chapter 254: Here Comes the Robbers

"The two most powerful sects in this world. They are the Sunshine Sect and the Starglow Sect." Wan Zhenghao's face turned green, "We are just tiny little figures in front of them. Ling-Bao Hall is equal to nothing compared to them. They are too powerful... Ah."

Ye Xiao humphed and said, "Too powerful? What did they say, that Sunshine Sect and the Starglow Sect?"

His face turned cold.

[Sunshine Sect? Humph. It should be the branch sect of the Sunlight Sect in the Qing-Yun Realm. Starglow Sect? Must be the branch sect of the Starlight Sect... It turns out these two factions both have their branches in the Land of Han-Yang!]

"The Sunshine Sect said that they need all kinds of supreme dan and they want six dan beads of each. The Starglow Sect required the same, but they asked for eight dan beads of each kind..."

Wan Zhenghao was bitter, helpless and annoyed.

Ye Xiao turned a cold face. He laughed, "Heh, heh. So they asked for that much? What did they offer for what they wanted?"

Wan Zhenghao showed a bitter face, and there was an even stronger anger inside his eyes. He said, "They never said anything

about the price."

"Hahahaha..." Ye Xiao couldn't help laughing out. He laughed because of being furious. He said with a deep voice, "So they want to rob us? They don't want to pay? So something like being robbed is truly happening to me?"

"Even though they are planning to pay, it won't be much. It would be out of their budget to pay for one dan bead, I am afraid."

Wan Zhenghao sighed and continued, "I screwed it up this time. I didn't expect such super sects who had thousands of years of history would actually do such a shameless thing."

"You are wrong, Wan Zhenghao. You know so little. And things you know are all too low-class. That's why you would blame yourself on such a thing. In fact, you don't need to, because..."

Ye Xiao sneered and said, "Because the more powerful those sects are, the more shameless they will be. They think that they have the absolute power to overwhelm us, and we are unable to resist. That's why they would act so boldly like this."

"It is lucky that we make the auction into such a huge issue, otherwise... We may be wiped out by some sects secretly. We have told the world that we have a lot of supreme dan beads. It was like a child carrying gold walking in the market. People are greedy."

He smiled and said, "I have seen such things before it happened. I

will actually be more surprised if they will be willing to pay even a bit. In my opinion, it is normal that they won't give us anything and just rob the dan beads... Well, they actually still know how to protect their reputation. Maybe in their minds, they think we should be grateful that they are willing to pay that bit."

Wan Zhenghao wiped the sweat on his forehead and said, "No wonder you told me to make it as big as I can. You already have a plan for this. However, what should we do now that things are like this? They are sick and shameless, and we are the weaker side. It is true that we cannot defeat them!"

In his heart, he was thinking, [Why does the Monarch know so well about the way those sects do? He is angry, but he isn't surprised. Apparently, he knew it already. He had planned how to deal with it. I have been in this business for so many years, but I have never reached those super sects. Monarch is still young. How does he know so well? Even though he is naturally born smart and wise, he is short in experience after all!]

He was just thinking. He didn't dare to say anything.

Monarch Feng was so confident and mysterious. That made Wan Zhenghao feel worshipful.

"Wan, you don't need to worry too much. Since I have known this would happen, I surely know how to deal with it. It isn't easy to take advantage from us!" Ye Xiao sneered. He was full of disdain.

Wan Zhenghao felt eased at once.

In fact, Wan Zhenghao believed in Feng Zhiling out of no apparent reason. The two super sects were the most powerful forces in the whole Land of Han-Yang. Even the entire Kingdom of Chen might not be able to defeat any one of them, and they both have their supports from the upper realm.

That was some extremely powerful forces. Feng Zhiling indeed have a lot of supreme dan beads, and as Wan Zhenghao knew, he had a grandmaster dan-maker. Feng Zhiling himself was a good dan-maker, but he was still lacking in the basis of martial cultivation. Ling-Bao Hall had improved a lot recently, and even Liu Changjun joined them. However, they only had limited strength. It might be easy to deal with some normal sects, but as for Sunshine Sect and Starglow Sect, it would be like throwing eggs onto the stones. However, Feng Zhiling just said something and Wan Zhenghao truly believed it and stopped worrying!

Ye Xiao asked, "Are all our big rooms booked?"

"All booked. Only three rooms are reserved for you as you wish. The rooms of Sky, Earth and Human. All the other people who hadn't booked any rooms will need to sit in the main hall. The rooms of letter Earth and room of letter Human had been occupied by the Sunshine Sect and Starglow Sect." Wan Zhenghao answered.

Ye Xiao nodded and said slowly, "What about the Sky Room No. 1?"

Wan Zhenghao was surprised as he stared at Ye Xiao. He thought that he should be the only one who knew about the Sky Room No. 1. However, Ye Xiao sounded like he had known it well.

"Monarch, how did you know..." Wan Zhenghao said.

"It is under my expectation. In the Land of Han-Yang, there is only one man who is powerful enough to take the Sky Room No. 1. Only this one man."

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up as he blandly said, "I need to meet him."

Wan Zhenghao was shocked as he said, "Well... I am afraid... It will be a bit too dangerous."

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "It is only for the current situation. If we want to get rid of the current obstacles, we have to use his power. As long as we can have time to develop, when we get strong enough, they will all die!"

"The two super sects... Hey, super?!" While Ye Xiao was speaking the word "super", there were endless indifference and killing intent inside his voice.

...

Chapter 255: The Egg That Had No Idea What to Do

When Wan Zhenghao heard Ye Xiao's voice, he couldn't help quivering.

"That man hasn't shown up yet." Wan Zhenghao said, "The person who came and booked the Sky Room No. 1 only brought a token. And that's all."

"Since the token was shown here, things are obvious..." Ye Xiao made two steps ahead and affirmatively spoke with a low voice, "He will show up eventually."

Wan Zhenghao was confused. He had no idea what that meant.

He truly didn't understand why the Monarch was so confident that the mysterious man would definitely come to the auction the next day.

The auction was indeed a big event. The objects on the auction were all precious. However, that mysterious man was truly a person who could stir the storms with one hand. He was a super figure who could decide on anyone's life and death. How could he be so sure about such a man's motivation.

And, according to what Feng Zhiling just told him, he was about to use such a man's power to deal with the two super sects. It seemed to be a difficult job, and even if he succeeded, it might lead

to some disastrous consequences.

However, those were only thoughts of Wan Zhenghao. He didn't dare to say it.

“The auction will be launched as we planned. We don't give anyone or any forces any special treatment.” Ye Xiao said, “Ignore the requests from the two sects. If they have money and resources, they are free to join the auction. If they don't, they won't get a damn penny. They must be crazy to think that they could get things for free from us!”

He sneered and left.

“That is crazy...” Wan Zhenghao murmured these words twice.

Nobody knew whether he was talking about the Feng Monarch or the two super sects...

Ye Xiao just disappeared like a mass of fog.

The gelid qi that he had absorbed from Bing Xinyue started to take effect with the Cosmic Hades in the Boundless Space. The gelid qi, which had been quiet for a long time, was now popping out. It seemed as though it was going to shake the balance of the Spaces. Ye Xiao had to deal with such situation first. It might lead to a severe consequence, so he didn't dare to ignore it.

He wanted to stay in the salesroom for a little bit longer and

discuss about the auction with Wan Zhenghao, yet he couldn't. He just hurried back to the House of Ye.

The change brought by the gelid qi from the illness of Bing Xinyue was big. Since he absorbed the gelid qi, only a few hours had passed, yet the gelid qi had already created a disaster in the Spaces. He nearly lost control of it.

When he returned to his room and checked on the Spaces, the Wood Space was about to break down.

He didn't dare to hesitate. He immediately started to digest the gelid qi.

He was now quite skillful with digesting the energy in the Spaces. Only after a while did he finally stabilize the Spaces. This time, he entered the Sky Space and sealed the Sky Space completely. He stayed inside it and took care of the gelid qi himself.

In the tunnel, the egg was able to absorb some of that gelid qi, but it was just a tiny piece of all the qi that was created this time.

Ye Xiao could feel that the egg had its self-consciousness already. It started to know how to snatch the resource for itself.

That was not allowed!

It was forbidden!

Ye Xiao would never let this kind of things happen again.

[This is my place. It is inside my body!

I am the owner! All right?!

If my place is snatched by an egg...

How can I, the Xiao Monarch, smile? I should just go hit the wall on my head and let myself die for it.

That is so embarrassing.]

He was concentrated on digesting the gelid qi in order to make it bring some positive effects on himself. He felt that his cultivation capability was improving bit by bit. Step by step, he started to forget everything else.

When he was about to become fully immersed, he suddenly felt that the Spaces were shaking.

Surprisingly, the egg actually flew up and was making turns in the air.

It looked anxious.

Ye Xiao hadn't put things into the Boundless Space for over ten days. And in fact... He had taken out many things from the Space...

The egg was quite upset and pissed about it.

Well, it knew that Ye Xiao must be angry about being kicked out the last time though.

Recently, when Ye Xiao occasionally entered the Space, he would just ignore the egg. The egg had tried to get close to him and fix their relationship. However, Ye Xiao never gave any positive replies.

He was obviously angry!

The first few days, the egg was still casual and did nothing. After three or four days, it started to roll and turn every now and then. It seemed okay though. After six days, it started to feel anxious, and it started to try to improve its relation with Ye Xiao, yet it never worked. Eight days had passed, they were still in a bad relation. The egg finally panicked.

[He won't just cut off the supply to the Spaces, will he?

Well, it won't be a problem for him at least for a short time. It will just slow down the pace of his improvement!

But what about me?]

The egg was so worried, and it wanted to apologize to Ye Xiao, but Ye Xiao wouldn't give it the chance to.

The egg was worried and anxious. No matter how amazing it was, it was still an egg. It couldn't speak. As long as Ye Xiao quit trying to communicate with it, they wouldn't be able to talk.

Things were so bad that its yolk nearly broke up.

Finally, it saw Ye Xiao enter the Space again. It was so happy. Although Ye Xiao kept ignoring it, it decided to do something immediately.

Otherwise, if Ye Xiao ignored it for a longer time, it would have less and less food to eat. That would certainly lead to his death.

Hmm. [That could truly finish him.](#)

So it flew up and flew around outside the Sky Space, waiting for Ye Xiao to get out.

The Sky Space was sealed up by Ye Xiao, but it was an easy job for the egg to open it and enter it.

It would have opened it if things were just the same like the old days, but now it wouldn't dare. It wouldn't want to risk losing its life because it pissed Ye Xiao off again.

When Ye Xiao was showing kindness to the egg, the egg got to do whatever it wanted. When he stopped caring about it, it had no idea what to do.

After reaching the first level of the Sky Origin Stage, Ye Xiao clearly felt that his dantian's capacity had increased by nearly ten times. His Jing and Mai had become more flexible.

...

Here the author uses the word 完蛋. It means finished and it has the character 蛋 which means egg.

Chapter 256: Strange Power

Ye Xiao could clearly feel that after the breakthrough, the spiritual qi, which used to be surging inside him, was now like a brooklet running in his Jing and Mai because of their changes.

It was a shocking change, but it was reasonable. His dantian's capacity expanded a lot. It was about ten times bigger now. The spiritual qi that used to that used have reached the limits of his capacity was now far from enough. It was like a bowl of water being poured into a bucket. It seemed a like lot of water while it was in the bowl, but then it became far less than it seemed to be when it was in the bucket. Now there was a huge space left inside the bucket waiting to be filled up.

For the same reason, his Jing and Mai had become broader. It was several times wider than before. From a narrow alley which only allowed one carriage to pass through, it turned into a big street that allowed several carriages to pass through side by side. That was a huge difference.

It was a fantastic thing that he finally broke through a new level, but there was something awkward. His dantian was now nearly empty. The spiritual qi which used to fill him up was now only ten percent of the capacity of his dantian. The spiritual qi running inside his Jing and Mai was only like brooklet. He couldn't get used to the new condition of his Jing and Mai. And most importantly, there was not enough spiritual qi to fill up anything.

The key to solve such a problem was easy and simple. He just needed to absorb spiritual qi, a huge amount of spiritual qi. Only

by filling it up could he start to consider further issues. The priority now was to consolidate his power.

[Spiritual qi. Ah.] Ye Xiao was thinking and frowning.

It was a real problem.

It wasn't an easy job to absorb a huge amount of spiritual qi that must work along well with his own pure spiritual qi within a short time. By operating the East-rising Purple Qi, he could fill his dantian in at least seven months. It was pretty fast already, but he couldn't wait now.

Luckily, right after he broke through, he started to work on the illness of Bing Xinyue. The yin cold qi that he absorbed from Bing Xinyue was pure and dense. That was exactly what Ye Xiao needed.

Surprisingly, he discovered that after being transformed by the East-rising Purple Qi, that cold qi from Bing Xinyue became some extremely pure energy. It entered his dantian and filled up the interspace right away.

Ye Xiao was quite happy about it, yet he didn't dare to be reckless on it. As an experienced cultivator, he knew that anything could happen during cultivation. Any tiny mistakes could lead to a severe consequence. The yin cold qi being transformed by the East-rising Purple Qi was now an absolutely good thing to him, but nobody could be sure yet.

After all, an extremely tasty pie might be poisonous.

Thinking of that, Ye Xiao focused on checking the strange power from that spiritual qi. And he actually found something strange.

The yin cold qi was converted by the East-rising Purple Qi, and it fully turned into pure spiritual qi. It was good for his body. However, there seemed to be another kind of energy hidden inside that spiritual qi.

This hidden energy was strong and powerful. Although there was only a little of it, yet it still created a feeling of enormousness. Moreover, this energy seemed to be fitting well with energy of the East-rising Purple Qi.

That really surprised Ye Xiao.

As known to us all, Ye Xiao was the Xiao Monarch who had been a great cultivator in the Qing-Yun Realm. He was incredibly experienced and informed.

Since he started to cultivate the East-rising Purple Qi, although he hadn't been improving fast and was still below the league of great cultivators in the world, the East-rising Purple Qi was some marvelous martial art. It must be one of the highest ranged martial arts. Ye Xiao had never seen any other martial arts that could be more powerful than the East-rising Purple Qi.

Even though it was at the initial level at the moment, it was

nearly invincible.

The strange power hidden inside the yin cold qi was not as powerful as the East-rising Purple Qi, but it was almost the same.

It was, after all, Bing Xinyue's inheritance power.

As Ye Xiao worked on it more, the more surprised he was, and he was happy about it at the same time.

This time, he helped Bing Xinyue with her illness, and at the same time, he stabilized his cultivation condition after the breakthrough. It was helping himself at the same time when he helped others.

During the whole process, he was both happy and surprised. It had been two hours since he started to digest the power till he finished.

When he opened the Sky Space again, he took a long breath out with relief, "Finally done. I am improved more on cultivation. However, although it seems that I have improved a lot, it is still difficult to tell how much I improved as I am already in the Sky Origin Stage now."

"The Land of Han-Yang is a low-classed realm after all. It is way lower than the Qing-Yun Realm. If I am in the Qing-Yun Realm, with the denser spiritual qi in the air, it would be much better for me to improve. Even though I have the Boundless Space, an

outstanding cultivating method, it cannot reach the pure spiritual qi in the Qing-Yun Realm after all. So I can't improve the quality of the spiritual qi. That is something that cannot be changed. The Boundless Space has its limits after all."

"Even though my situation is hundreds or even thousands times better than other cultivators, the spiritual qi is not the purest spiritual qi."

Ye Xiao was anxious.

Although he was well aware of the situation, he just couldn't do anything about it.

By judging under a very strict standard, he was really improving fast. However, even though he was improving so fast, it was far from what he was expecting.

He wondered how long would it take to return to the position of the Xiao Monarch he used to be... if he was just improving on such a speed.

There was truly a big gap between now and then.

He knew that it wasn't something easy, but he was still upset about it. Especially now that those people whom he could have killed by just a single blow with his cultivation capability in his previous life kept showing off in front of him yet he just couldn't defeat them... He was just so upset about it.

As for now, he would continue feeling upset for a long time in the coming future.

The happiness suddenly disappeared in his heart. He sighed and got out of the Space. Unexpectedly...

- Bang. -

He hit on something with his head. He felt so painful on his head, and there were like a lot of stars shining in his sight. He almost passed out...

...

Chapter 257: The Position of the Egg

Although Ye Xiao was weak compared to who he used to be in his previous life, he was now one of the top cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang. His true capability made him an absolute superior cultivator in this realm. Even though he was carrying a troubled heart, he shouldn't be attacked under expectation at this moment.

He calmed himself down and looked up. All he could see was only... an egg.

The egg seemed to be frightened too. It was struck out about ten meters away, shaking and flying round and round in the air.

[It was it?]

Ye Xiao suddenly felt scared about what happened.

He was surprised that he might get into some surprising attack, but now he was really scared about it.

There were not many things that could scare the Xiao Monarch. To hit that egg was definitely one of them.

It was an egg that could smash a Dao Origin Stage cultivator like Gu Jinlong to death. It was a super egg. Ye Xiao still remembered the scene when the egg smashed Gu Jinlong's head which was hard and invulnerable into a pile of minced meat.

And now it actually hit Ye Xiao's head.

Ye Xiao shook his head and touched his head and found it swollen.

It was lucky that it only made it swollen.

"What the fxxk!" Ye Xiao felt himself lucky and then felt annoyed. He frowned and shouted angrily to the egg, "Get out of here."

The egg didn't leave. It kept flying round and round, up and down in the air around Ye Xiao's head. It seemed it was apologizing.

Ye Xiao was in an extremely bad mood. He didn't want to talk to it. He just waved his hand and moved to the exit with a dark face.

- Shoot. -

The egg came to the front to his face fast.

"What on earth do you want?" Ye Xiao frowned and shouted, "I don't have time for you right now. There are countless of things waiting for me to deal with. Even if I do have time, I won't talk with you. You actually expelled me in my own place... Since you are so powerful, what is the thing you are not capable of? Let's just ignore each other and we both have a peaceful time."

And then he just walked out and didn't even want to look at the egg for one more second.

The egg flew to him again, and this time, it directly stayed right next to his head, pushing him. Apparently, it didn't want him to leave.

Ye Xiao was more annoyed and he tried to resist it. But he found himself unable to push the egg a bit. Nothing happened to the egg, and he only felt pain on his head. The egg didn't do anything. It just stayed still right there, not stepping back in the slightest.

"What on earth do you want?" Ye Xiao was angry.

He had every reason to get mad. The egg was too violent on asking for cooperation. It was a super egg that could kill a Dao Origin Stage super cultivator by one hit. He must be stupid to forcibly push it away. Of course he would get hurt. It was lucky that he didn't get his head smashed. Well, it was enough for him to understand it by hitting it one time. If he did it again, he must be retarded.

Ye Xiao shouted with anger, and the egg was jumping up and down in front of him. It jumped and jumped. Eventually, it stayed still in front of him.

It felt like it was expecting something, but it wasn't sure.

Ye Xiao understood it a little, so he said, "So you are apologizing to me, aren't you?"

The egg jumped like it was nodding.

"I don't care." Ye Xiao turned away and tried to get going.

The egg was like in anxiety. It pushed his head again and didn't want him to go.

Ye Xiao slapped on it with his hand. Nothing happened to the egg, but only his hand was struck with great pain.

He felt more furious as he said with anger, "Get the hell off! You are just an egg. You are not a dog, are you? Even a damned dog wouldn't block people's way!"

It seemed like the egg didn't care about whatever he spoke. It just kept him there and wouldn't let him move.

Apparently, no matter how many things Ye Xiao wanted to say, the egg was just right there.

For a long time, Ye Xiao just couldn't do anything about it.

He rubbed the sides of his head in annoyance, "You are nothing but an egg. You shouldn't even have consciousness. Not to mention feelings... And you just stay here blocking my way. What do you

want? You can't even talk. How am I supposed to communicate with you?"

Finally, the egg moved. It flew around him again and again.

Ye Xiao sighed.

[What the heck.

Even though you keep responding by doing something like this. How am I supposed to understand it?

What do you expect me to say?]

Things cooled down again. The egg suddenly shook itself in the air like it was enlightened. It actually moved to the back of Ye Xiao and pushed him forward.

And when Ye Xiao was moving to the direction it didn't want him to, it flew back to the front and stopped him. And then it returned to the back and pushed him to where it wanted him to go. Ye Xiao finally got it. It was trying to lead him to the tunnel.

It was the area where the spiritual qi was the densest.

Because the egg was so tough and stubborn, Ye Xiao had to walk to the tunnel step by step. And when he eventually saw the big plate inside, the egg speeded up over to the plate and flew around

it. And then it returned to Ye Xiao and moved up and down in front of him. At last, it moved to the back again and pushed him forward again. When Ye Xiao was pushed close to the plate, it was still pushing him.

"So you want me to... to get up on it?" Ye Xiao looked at the plate and understood something. He felt speechless.

This plate was the most precious area in the whole Space. The egg had been occupying it alone for a long time, yet now it actually gave it to Ye Xiao.

[This is a movement to show kindness, but I don't really want it.]

The egg was still pushing him. He didn't have any way to resist it.

So he had to go up and sat on that plate, thinking that perhaps it was worth a shot.

The egg stopped pushing him, and it just flew round and round in the air happily. And then it landed in front of him, right at his crotch...

It turned silent and didn't move anymore.

Ye Xiao suddenly lost his bearings about the last few actions of the egg. He was a bit dizzy.

[What... What the hell is this?

Isn't it too shocking?

When I was trying to find somewhere near this area to cultivate for a while, the egg didn't want me to. It always drove me away. Now it actually pushed me to sit here.

But... It really isn't a proper place for me to sit on.

The plate is obviously for an egg.

The edge of the plate was curled up a bit, and at its center, there was a little bun. It was perfect to put an egg on it. How could it be possible for a man to sit on it... Well, it could be a proper thing to sit on, because, after all, we all have butt seams...]

The spiritual qi was rushing out from that bun like wild. He only felt his butt cooling down. Who else could experience... a wild wind howling inside the butt seam...

[Well, I do.] Ye Xiao spoke in mind and didn't know whether to cry or to laugh.

He guessed that even if he could fart all the gas he farted since his life began, it wouldn't be as fierce as this.

...

Chapter 258: Happiness of the Egg

It was an awkward position, and the way the spiritual qi got into him was awkward too. However, Ye Xiao got to know how good it was when he just sat down.

That was... he didn't even need to do anything yet the spiritual qi would rush into him crazily like storms. The only thing he needed to do was to take it!

Digest it! Gather it! Purify it!

That was all!

The speed of the spiritual qi entering him made him feel like he couldn't catch up with it. It seemed that he would explode if he was a bit slow with it. The streams of spiritual qi kept rushing over his Jing and Mai. He didn't have the time to care about how it worked. It just kept rushing over and over again, like it would never end.

"It is a good place indeed." Ye Xiao was truly shocked. Even though Ye Xiao knew that this place must be something extraordinary since the egg had occupied it for such a long time, he didn't expect that it would be so marvelous. Now when he looked at the egg, there was heat in his eyes.

[What an asshole egg. It stayed so long sitting here. I can't imagine how big the amount of spiritual qi it has taken.

It must be a terrific amount.

It must be more enormous than the word astronomy, enumerability and infinity!]

Even when he was the Xiao Monarch in his previous life, he wouldn't have absorbed more than this egg did.

And the Xiao Monarch had to purify the spiritual qi before it was useful for him.

The egg didn't need to purify it. No matter how much spiritual qi, it just kept taking it all in. It would never be too much.

It just accepted any bit of it.

For all those days it absorbed a huge amount of spiritual qi, yet it still hadn't hatched!

It didn't look like it was going to hatch at all.

"You are really a weird egg!"

Ye Xiao sighed with emotion. He was focusing on dealing with the rush-over of the spiritual qi. Even though he was giving out whatever he could to deal with it, he felt it harder and harder to handle. He didn't have the time to purify it at all. There was just too much spiritual qi!

Besides, he was in a very indelicate posture.

Sitting on a plate that was designed for an egg, didn't it make him another egg?

He just sat there acting weird with the wild wind blowing under his butt. And the spiritual qi kept blowing into the hole of his... That was super awkward.

And most unbelievably, there was an egg lying at his croth. That made it three eggs at that place...

Thinking about that, Ye Xiao was a bit scared. He hurriedly stood up.

In fact, he had to stand up. If he went on sitting there, his Jing and Mai might explode because they could no longer hold more spiritual qi. He should digest and purify the spiritual qi in his body as soon as possible.

After the awkward but pleasant butthole blowing experience, Ye Xiao looked at the plate in astonishment.

He did some math in his mind. According to the speed of the spiritual qi coming out, he wondered till at what level could he just sit there and continue cultivating without stopping. And then he was astonished like hell.

The conclusion was that even he was at the top level of the Sky Origin Stage, he wouldn't be able to hold it.

He would be killed with his body exploding.

To continually sit on this plate without stopping, he would have to be at least at the top level of the Spirit Origin Stage! And that couldn't last for over two hours!

The egg was apparently surprised about how soon Ye Xiao got off that plate. It flew over to Ye Xiao, and it looked confused and upset.

[I have given you the best spot... and you actually stood up from it?

Are you still mad at me?

You... Don't you think you are being too narrow-minded!]

Ye Xiao noticed the egg's emotion, so he coughed with awkwardness. He was a bit embarrassed about doing something unfair to the egg. He said, "This is your spot, so it should be you sitting here. I get your kindness."

The egg moved backward a bit. Apparently, it didn't understand why.

Ye Xiao held it up directly and put it onto the plate.

And then he sat on the corner beside it and nodded. He said, "It is fine for me to sit here!"

The egg jumped on the plate and showed some sense of happiness and dependance, like it was moved. [What a good man. He actually gave me the best spot...

What a good man.

He actually treats me so well and thinks so much for me. I actually kicked him out of here once. I was so wrong... It is reasonable that he was mad at me.]

The egg was touched, so it flew up and got into Ye Xiao's arms rubbing him.

It was like a little kitty trying to please its owner.

Ye Xiao was stunned.

He could clearly feel that the egg was relying on him. It was ten times relying on him!

[What happened?

What did I do?

I didn't do anything, did I?]

He was truly shocked. [I just gave you what belongs to you. And I gave it to you because I cannot handle it... It actually moved you this much?

An egg is an egg after all...]

Ye Xiao sighed.

However, the egg had gone soft, so Ye Xiao didn't want to keep going against it. [I am a man. Why should I be mad at an egg?]

He was being generous, and he decided to treat it better...

When he left the Space, the egg was unwilling to let him. [The good man is leaving...]

It walked him out to the entrance and nearly jumped into Ye Xiao's arms to leave with him.

The egg was so simple-minded. Ye Xiao felt a bit guilty. It was not honorable to take advantage of it.

So when he got out, he put all the materials outside back into the

Space. That was a huge amount of materials that had been collected by Ling-Bao Hall in the recent days.

The storeroom of the House of Ye was almost full.

He just put them all into the Space at one time. All of a sudden, the Wood Space had been doubled in space, and the Gold Space was filled up. After a long time, the essence of gold and metal were all digest, and the other things inside became dust.

That increased about half a thousand kilograms of essence.

It became a small piece silently staying at the center.

The Gold Space became empty again.

The other Spaces got their gains too. The spiritual qi was increased rapidly in the Spaces!

There was more spiritual qi flying around in the Space.

The egg was so excited that it nearly broke itself on a rock. It kept rolling and spinning in the air. If it could speak, it would say "hail".

It was so happy!

...

Chapter 259: Bing-Er's Emotional Attachment

After putting in a lot of treasures and other materials, Ye Xiao felt that his spiritual qi was surging. The Space had been empty for a long time, yet it was suddenly filled with spiritual qi. That was a surprising change to him. He smiled and returned to his room. And then he heard a timid voice, saying, "Brother Ye, you're back?"

The girl in the room was timidly looking at him.

Ye Xiao was embarrassed. It might be a bad decision to have brought her in his room, he thought. After all those days, Bing-Er got used to staying in his room, and she just occupied his bed.

Ye Xiao looked at the girl as his face turned dark. The girl was covered by sweat, and her hair was moist.

"Why can't you just listen to me. Don't move around. You are not well yet." Ye Xiao looked at her with censure, "How is it today?"

"Nothing. Nothing bad." A satisfied smile appeared on Bing-Er's peaceful face, "I really didn't move around casually for nothing. I was just cultivating, and after cultivating, the spiritual qi filled me, so I would surely move my body a bit. It hurts a lot at the beginning. It made me sweat because of the pain, but... After I moved, I always felt myself recovered a lot. It isn't my illusion. It is the truth."

Ye Xiao sighed. He didn't dare to treat it lightly, so he moved over to check on her.

She had indeed recovered a lot. She was not only out of the critically dangerous situation, but she was also able to move herself around. She could even handle some of her personal issues. The most important thing was that, other than her broken legs, the other parts of her body were all nearly recovered. After resting for more time, she would definitely get well.

The most difficult problem was her lumbar vertebra. It suffered the most damage. Ye Xiao had been working on this part particularly. A huge amount of treasures and medical materials had been used on this. He was doing it without considering the cost.

According to his judgement, it would need to take a long time to fix the lumbar vertebra, even if he spent everything he could to repair it. However, Bing-Er's body had, once again, surprised him. With Bing-Er's subliminal help, the efficacy of all those medical materials all gathered to the waist. It wasted nothing. That made the lumbar vertebra's recovery to become faster.

Ye Xiao was confused about the help from Bing-Er though.

No matter how good the treatment was, how good the materials were, if they worked on a different area, it would bring no change to her lumbar vertebra. During the treatment, the loss of the material efficacy was unavoidable. It would be very efficient if half of the medical material were working on the target area. The lost efficacy would either stay somewhere inside the body or get out of

the body. The body would barely be benefited on this part.

In fact, that's where the shortage of the Chinese medical method "combat poison with poison" stands. The part of the poisonous treatment that wouldn't work would eventually bring damage to the body. In fact, the medical efficacy has been following the same principle. The part of the medical efficacy that cannot benefit the body would become the "poison", that's why medicine has always been partly toxic.

Bing-Er's help was keeping the medical efficacy from getting lost in an unbelievable way. It made almost all the medicine work on the target area. So surely, the process of her recovery would be much shorter than Ye Xiao expected.

It wasn't Bing-Er's willingness to help that made it unbelievable. Not even the process. In fact, if Bing-Er was some super powerful cultivator, it wouldn't be so surprising. Even normal Dream Origin Stage cultivators were mostly unable to do that. However, to Ye Xiao, Bing-Er was just an ordinary girl who had lost her memory, yet she could do it.

That was why it was unbelievable to Ye Xiao.

"It is truly so hard to compare one person to another..." Ye Xiao sighed as he looked up.

He had to admit that there were geniuses in the world.

Not only did Bing-Er's gift surprised Ye Xiao, but also her tolerance and tenacity.

As she moved herself even a bit, it would definitely hurt her a lot. However, she kept moving around herself everyday, trying to practice and recover sooner

Ye Xiao once told her that it would make it easier for her body to absorb the medical efficacy and make her recover faster if she moved herself more.

And she remembered it.

Even though it hurt her so much that her tears came out every time she moved, she kept doing it, simply because of what Ye Xiao had told her. She just wanted to get better as soon as she could.

"I have to get well soon. Only then can I serve my good brother..." Bing-Er bit her lips and stretched her legs and arms. She was in a huge pain that her tears came down. She looked at Ye Xiao with tears and hopes in her eyes.

Ye Xiao felt so distressed for her. He said, "Bing-Er, just get yourself better. Don't worry about others."

Bing-Er nodded softly and walked over lamely. She held Ye Xiao's arm with her two hands and raised her head while looking at him. She took a breath of relief and said, "I cannot sleep before you come back."

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Alright. Okay. Come. Let me help wash you, so you can get some rest early."

Bing-Er blushed and said, "Hmm... I think I should just do it on my own."

Ye Xiao was relieved. It was quite a raunchy torture to him everyday when he had to help her wash her body.

He suffered the torture both visually and mentally. It was even worse than any physical torture.

He couldn't do anything facing a mature naked body that was in a perfect shape. And he had to call himself monster every time when he had some special thoughts about her, especially when he looked at her pure eyes.

Every time he did that, he felt that he was carrying a heavy sin no matter what he did. He felt that he was a beast.

The first time she washed her almost made him explode.

And he had to cuddle with the girl and make her sleep. It was just for sleeping, nothing else...

How cruel of a torture it was?

He had to call himself a monster first, then he would think of himself as something lower than beast. That was a torture on his heart.

Now that the girl could do it herself, that was such a good news to him. What a blessing!

Ye Xiao sat at the side of the bed as he listened to the sound from the bathroom. It was the sound of the water splashing. A gorgeous body of perfect shape suddenly appeared in his mind. He felt that his nose was getting hotter and hotter, and he nearly bled like a mountain.

...

Chapter 260: Raunchy Torture

Under most circumstances, imagination is more agitating than reality. That's true.

Ye Xiao hurriedly operated a martial art named Ice Heart Spell to calm himself down.

At this particular moment, along the spacing sound of water, Bing-Er's confused voice sounded, "Brother Xiao..."

Brother Xiao...

That voice was so fascinating. Ye Xiao nearly lost control. He coughed and said, "What?"

"I am curious..." Bing-Er's sound was full of confusion, "The two swollen parts on my chest... What are they? I don't remember having them before. I thought it was hit and got swollen. But many days have passed, yet it doesn't go down a bit. It doesn't hurt and it isn't itchy, but..."

- Puff! -

He just had a thought of those two big buns and couldn't hold the blood inside his nose anymore. It rushed out like a blood fountain.

He was now a bit anaemic as he wiped the blood on his nose. It

was like he wanted to weep but had no tears. He said, "Cough. It is no damage. It is a sign showing that you are grown up."

Bing-Er was confused, "Really? I feel myself different too. I wasn't this tall back then."

"Oh, and my face looks different... This face just doesn't seem to be mine..." Bing-Er was still confused.

Ye Xiao, "You are just getting more and more beautiful."

Bing-Er was pleased, "Oh, really?"

"Of course. It is the truth." Ye Xiao nodded in affirmation.

"But the two big buns of meat... So annoying. They can't be pressed down. They just stand up like this..." Bing-Er spoke in annoyance, "Is there anything I can do to make it droop... They are just too big. I can't even walk conveniently. They are simply burdens to me."

She was murmuring and complaining.

Ye Xiao tried so hard to stop his nosebleed, yet it bled once again.

[Oh my god.

How many women want such perfect breasts but you actually want them to droop...]

Ye Xiao rolled up his eyes while wiping the blood on his nose.

"I just can't get used to my top..." Bing-Er continued murmuring, "But there are hairs under..."

"Oh my god..." Ye Xiao finally couldn't bear it. He shouted with sorrow and grabbed the quilt to cover his head. [Oh my god. Just let me die. I don't want to live anymore... This is killing me...]

Finally, the sound of the girl washing herself stopped. The sound of her footsteps gradually appeared. She walked to the bed and Ye Xiao smelled a scent that smelled like orchid and musk.

It refreshed Ye Xiao somehow.

"Brother Xiao... What is wrong?" Bing-Er saw that the towel on the bed was stained with blood, and there seemed to be blood on the floor. She was shocked and jumped over to him. She took away the quilt on Ye Xiao and said, "Brother Xiao, what happened to you... Why are you bleeding... Are you hurt?"

Looking at the blood coming out from Ye Xiao's nose, she was scared. She held him tight and spoke in fear, "Brother Xiao... What happened... Please don't die... Ohhh..."

Ye Xiao felt that his face was inside some pile of softness. It was

big and soft, and he felt so good. The scent was getting into his nose. The blood once again rushed out from his nose...

"I have never met anybody that treats me as well as you do. Brother Xiao... If you die, I won't live..." Bing-Er's tears were dropping down.

Ye Xiao was so unwilling to move his head out of her chest, but he had to. He murmured, "Silly Bing-Er, don't cry. Your Brother Xiaao is fine. I just have a bit of fever. Bleeding my nose helps me cool it down. Don't worry. Look how good I am right now."

Bing-Er looked at him and checked on him carefully. She hadn't recovered from the astonishment yet. Finally, she was a bit relieved. She said in confusion, "Is everything really fine? You bled a lot just now."

"I can't be better. It isn't a bad thing to bleed out a bit sometime." Ye Xiao nodded with affirmation. He was nearly driven crazy by the gorgeous beauty who had a mature body and a six years old brain at the same time.

He bled the third time just now, and it was making him a bit anaemic.

Bing-Er finally felt relieved because she knew Ye Xiao's words were solid. She clapped on her chest, and it made her breasts shook like waves, "Then I don't need to worry..."

Ye Xiao saw that great scene and nearly bled on the nose again. He operated his martial art to press it back.

The next moment, his quilt was taken up. Bing-Er only wore a small bellyband skirt and moved herself into the quilt bit by bit. She was trying not to touch the area on her body that was damaged. Finally, she got into the quilt with her entire body close to Ye Xiao. She sighed in satisfaction and murmured, "This is so happy that it feels like a dream, even though I am injured..."

And then her exquisite and soft arms held on Ye Xiao's body adroitly. Her smooth and soft body was hugging Ye Xiao's body tightly.

And she sighed and spoke with a more satisfied tone, "If I can hold Brother Xiao like this for the rest of my life, I will fear nothing. I will want nothing... Brother Xiao, I like you so much..."

Ye Xiao felt tender for her. He touched her head gently and said, "Bing-Er will be happy for the rest of her life. I promise you."

Bing-Er looked so happy. She happily nodded and kissed Ye Xiao on his cheek twice. She said, "I know you are the best to me." She finally lied down comfortably beside Ye Xiao. She breathed equably and was about to fall asleep. She murmured, "Such a happy life..." She was drowsy.

Ye Xiao was painfully shouting inside his heart, "There she comes. There she comes again. This is so cruel... Oh god. I am so in pain. God. Let me die..."

Holding a soft beautiful body, he was so anguished that he hadn't slept for all night. At the end, he had to get up and cultivate the East-rising Purple Qi.

He also operated the East-rising Purple Qi and the Yin and Yang martial art qi on Bing-Er who was asleep. He was trying to tidy up her Jing and Mai once again, so as to cure her and make her bones grow...

He dropped some special water drops on the most wounded parts of her body again and fed her some. Luckily, she could swallow it herself now. If she still couldn't, he would have to feed her with his mouth, and he would bleed on his nose for the fourth time.

...

Chapter 261: The Terrible Spiritual Qi

After all that, he started to focus on cultivation.

This time, Ye Xiao clearly felt that there was another kind of energy inside his body. It seemed to be increasing...

He couldn't help praising in mind, [Bing Xinyue is truly marvelous in cultivation. I fully operated my martial art, yet I only managed to absorb about ten percent of the cold qi inside her. I have been working on it for such a long time, but I can't actually digest it all.

Moreover, that ten percent cold qi is still unbelievably powerful, and it feels like it is going to increase...]

"She is truly the inheritor of the Misty Cloud Palace. No wonder Lian-Lian would like her so much. Bing Xinyue is indeed a gifted one among all geniuses. It is remarkable that she has improved herself to such a level in cultivation."

He was gradually getting lost in it when cultivating.

On one hand, he was digesting the power from that illness in order to fully convert it, while on the other hand, he was trying to improve the East-rising Purple Qi. It was like nothing meant anything to him at this moment. He was like an entity who had achieve wholeness with the universe...

He apparently didn't notice that his hand was still on Bing-Er's body. His energy didn't go away when he stopped working on Bing-Er's Jing and Mai; it kept running inside her body. Every dozens or so of revolutions, there would be a tiny bit of the extremely pure gelid power that would be driven out... and silently enter into Ye Xiao's dantian...

In other words, the super powerful energy that came out was not because of Bing Xinyue... It was because of...

However, Ye Xiao had no idea about it.

At dawn, it was the time when the pure purple qi was at its strongest moment. Ye Xiao was still lost in cultivating.

Bing-Er woke up yet didn't do anything. She just kept watching Ye Xiao with her big pretty eyes wide opened while Ye Xiao was concentrated in cultivating. She thought that he was so handsome at this moment.

[He is so charming...

He looks so good.

How can he be so pretty?!!]

Bing-Er bit her own lip while looking at her Brother Xiao sentimentally. She suddenly remembered, [I heard that every girl should marry a man when she grows up... And a man should marry

a lady... Then when I grow up, can I marry Brother Xiao?]

Thinking of that, she suddenly felt shy. Her face turned red as she stayed in Ye Xiao's arms not daring to move a bit. She felt her heart was beating fast...

The purple qi suddenly showed up like an explosion.

At this moment, the East-rising Purple Qi, which had been running for a whole night, created a huge vortex because of the two circulations inside and outside Ye Xiao's body.

Because it was running inside Bing-Er's Jing and Mai, it looked like there was some reaction making the vortex bigger and bigger.

In the sky, it was silently spinning. Gradually, it turned into the shape of a huge funnel connecting the sky and the earth!

If Ye Xiao stopped right away, it would be fine. However, he was completely lost in it. He was enjoying it with his full heart and soul. How could he stop now?

Now the huge vortex of the East-rising Purple Qi seemed to sense the increase of the pure purple qi in the world. It suddenly span fast and created an extremely powerful mental aura.

It was like the ocean contained all the rivers!

With a "puff" sound, the purple qi gathered over like tides.

One after the other, they were like narrow streams moving over from as far as the skyline. They all rushed into Ye Xiao's Jing and Mai. He didn't even have the time to digest any before the purple qi had filled his entire dantian. It was so full that it felt like it would explode at any moment.

Luckily, the purple qi was just passing by his dantian before entering the Boundless Space.

In other words, his dantian was just its transfer station!

That was lucky for him. Otherwise, his dantian would have exploded because of the enormous amount purple qi. Even though he just broke through a new level, it wouldn't help a lot.

As the purple qi was increasing more and more, it was no more narrow streams. They all turned into "running rivers".

Ye Xiao's dantian, or his entire body, seemed to become a bridge connecting the Boundless Space and the outer world. The purple qi was running into the Space like flood through him.

Even though the Space was enormous, it was still filled by the purple qi after only seven minutes. Moreover, the Boundless Space was at the same awkward situation like what his dantian had just experienced.

There was a Boundless Space behind the dantian. Well, there were Nine Spaces in the Boundless Space.

The Nine Spaces were suddenly activated at the same time. They started to absorb the purple qi like crazy. It solved the problem of the "overloaded" Space crisis. While the Nine Spaces were crazily absorbing the purple qi like an ocean swallowing rivers, more purple qi was rushing in continually.

Even the Nine Spaces worked together to absorb the purple qi; it only made a balanced situation. The Boundless Space was staying extremely filled. Once the Nine Spaces slowed down, the Boundless Space might explode. That was some horrible balance there.

However, how come there was such huge amount of purple qi rushing into his dantian and into the Boundless Space so crazily?

There was a simple reason!

A while ago, the pure purple qi in the whole world suddenly disappeared.

At that moment, all the superior cultivators in the world felt that no matter how hard they tried, they just couldn't sense any of the spiritual qi in the world.

They were all shocked and had no idea why.

However, when they tried again a while after that, everything

was normal again. They were still confused, yet they felt relieved. Most of them had the same thought, [Did I have an illusion just now?]

And then they shook their heads and went on cultivating. They just thought that they were having an illusion.

Most of the cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang could just take it as an illusion and went on with whatever they were doing. However, as the man who caused this situation, Ye Xiao, who might have caused this incident involuntarily, had fallen into a big danger.

The others might have only felt that the spiritual qi had disappeared for a moment, but even though it was just as short as a moment, it was all the purple qi around the whole world that went missing. That was a compression of such an enormous amount of spiritual qi. Although it only took just a short time for all of it to get into the Space, it was still a horribly huge amount.

Maybe it was even too big to be described with "amount"!

The East-rising Purple Qi was indeed incredible and marvelous, but Ye Xiao was still in a low level. The Boundless Space was so mysterious that it contained so many aspects. As for now, it was just at the initial stage. It might already be powerful enough to act against god's will, but it still didn't have the capability to handle such a huge amount of spiritual qi.

This pie from the sky was apparently too big that it could kill Ye

Xiao!

...

Chapter 262: Was It an Illusion?

All the Nine Spaces inside the Boundless Space were running under an extreme circumstance, but it was just enough to hold it. The balance was so close to collapsing. A moment later, Ye Xiao, who was deeply lost in cultivation, finally had a reaction. His body was swelled like it was going to explode. He suddenly woke up. The East-rising Purple Qi that had been running in an extreme speed suddenly stopped too.

At this moment, Ye Xiao found that his dantian wasn't empty like it had been earlier. It was suddenly so full, and it was almost going to explode. The spiritual qi had filled his dantian, to the point where it was about to explode.

He was surprised.

He wondered how would such an unbelievable change happen within just a single night?

So he stopped the East-rising Purple Qi right away. The purple qi from all over the world stopped rushing into him!

It was actually that simple to stop a disaster from happening!

Surprisingly, he heard Bing-Er moaning. She seemed in pain with her eyebrows frowned.

The next moment, she became peaceful again. She actually took a

light breath out and looked casual.

Ye Xiao asked, "Bing-Er, what's wrong?"

Bing-Er was confused as she said, "I felt ill all of a sudden, like my body was about to explode. But I feel better now. Nothing wrong. And I actually feel comfortable. That's weird..."

Ye Xiao knew that he might have caused an effect to Bing-Er while he was cultivating. Now that she was alright, he felt relieved.

However, he would never know that the reason for all the changes was his East-rising Purple Qi. When the East-rising Purple Qi was running inside Bing-Er's body, it attracted the purple qi from all over the world. Furthermore, the purple qi filled Ye Xiao's body and the Boundless Space. When he suddenly stopped the East-rising Purple Qi, the purple qi stopped rushing into him. However, what he didn't know was that the last rushing mass of purple qi all rushed into Bing-Er's Jing and Mai instead of rushing into his.

That was the reason why Bing-Er felt ill, and her body felt like it was about to explode.

However, the next moment, the purple qi that remained inside Bing-Er, which was quite a lot, just disappeared inside her. She returned to normal all of a sudden. Bing-Er was the one who was experiencing it, yet she didn't know anything about it, that's why she was quite confused.

Well, Ye Xiao knew nothing about this either.

He totally had no idea how the spiritual qi could change so much. And in fact, he didn't know that if Bing-Er was a normal person, she should have already exploded into pieces moments ago...

As for why Bing-Er felt comfortable, it wasn't her illusion. She truly was comforted. A huge mass of spiritual qi had moistened her Jing and Mai that had been dry for a long time. She was completely nourished by it. It would be real weird if she didn't feel good about it!

Ye Xiao had poured spiritual qi into Bing-Er so as to wash her Jing and Mai. However, he treated her as an ordinary girl who had no cultivation capability at all. He had been pouring the spiritual qi in a too peaceful rate several times. Even though the East-rising Purple Qi was mysterious and incredible, Ye Xiao was in a low cultivation level. The several times of spiritual qi washes were nearly nothing to Bing-Er's body.

Although it had helped recovering her body, it would still take a long time. That's why Bing-Er was still yet to fully recover. This time, when the spiritual qi poured into her body in a massive amount, her Jing and Mai, which had been nearly dried out, were incredibly moistened. That surely brought her a good result!

Ye Xiao made sure Bing-Er was alright, and then he started to check on the Boundless Space. And he was shocked by what he found.

Inside the Boundless Space, the purple qi was all around. It was so dense that it seemed to be solid. The Nine Spaces were trying so hard to absorb and continually convert it into nutritions that they needed. Even though they were absorbing and digesting so hard, the spiritual qi inside the Boundless Space didn't seem to be reduced at all.

"What the hell!" Ye Xiao was stunned.

[What the hell is going on?

That is so horrific and so against the nature, isn't it?!]

Even though he was experienced and well-informed, he truly didn't understand what happened through the night.

How come there could be such a huge change within just one night.

He had just broken through the first level of the Sky Origin Stage, yet now he was almost about to break through the second level. The spiritual qi inside the Boundless Space was so full that it seemed to be about to explode at any second...

"If I can make this happen everyday, I will have a breakthrough every day..." Ye Xiao murmured as he rubbed his lower jaw, "That means I will only need ten days to return to the Qing-Yun Realm."

He couldn't help smiling while thinking about it.

However, he didn't know that he was simply having a good dream. What he had done was to kindly take care of Bing-Er's Jing and Mai. However, he didn't know that when he was doing that, he entered a special condition himself. That was when he mentally became one with the nature.

It was a wonderful thing to enter a condition where he became mentally one with the nature. It made him deeply devoted to cultivation. What he could achieve by cultivating under such a situation for one day could be as much as what he got after cultivating a hundred days under normal circumstances. In such a deep cultivation state, he was certainly lost in it. He was certainly lost in that absurd state, and his body had automatically cultivated. That was the best way to improve his martial art!

Bing-Er's Jing and Mai seemed normal. She was just like some ordinary person, but in fact, her Jing and Mai were profound like oceans.

While Ye Xiao was in that into-nature condition, he accidentally activated the hidden power inside Bing-Er. Because of that, the vortex that connected the sky and earth showed up. With the help of the East-rising Purple Qi, it suddenly wiped out all the purple qi all around the world within a second!

None of them noticed what had just happened. Although they were having profits from it, it brought a huge crisis to them at the same time. If Ye Xiao didn't have the Boundless Space to contain the purple qi from all over the world, and if Bing-Er accidentally kept the last part of the purple qi, both of them would have been

killed by self-explosion, because neither of them could contain the massive amount of the purple qi!

However, even if they wanted to return to this state again, it wouldn't be that easy. It required chance, luck, position, time... and all other factors. It wouldn't happen without having all those at the same time. As such, what Ye Xiao was dreaming of was nearly impossible to happen.

This accident had truly brought many dangers, but it turned out Ye Xiao got all the profits. Bing-Er got some of hers too. At least, she would be totally recovered by the next few days!

That was the purest energy of life!

Ye Xiao was feeling the spiritual qi inside him. He was confident. He murmured, "After the auction today, I am going to try to break through the second level!"

He simply washed himself and talked to Bing-Er before he left.

When Bing-Er saw Ye Xiao off, her big pretty eyes were blinking. It seemed she wanted to say something, but she didn't say it.

Ye Xiao's figure was out of her sight.

Bing-Er frowned and murmured, "Why do I feel weird about Brother Xiao? It is like... Like his body is filled with blood, with some kind of... horrible thing. What is wrong? Is it my illusion?"

Hmm. It must be!"

...

Chapter 263: Secret; The Intent To Kill!

Ye Xiao found a secret place to avoid being recognized. He changed into Feng Zhiling again.

He had been to this place for many times. It was a dead end. He could never get caught changing his appearance there. He had done it many times.

It was, however, a significant matter to not reveal his real identity, so he had to find somewhere safe to do the disguise. That place was the perfect option.

However, there was nothing sure in this world!

When Ye Xiao just finished changing his appearance and was prepared to walk out, suddenly, the wind blowed, and a man's sneer seemed to have echoed out.

"That is really beyond expectation. Truly is. The only son of the great General Ye, the head of the 'Three Lords in Town' known all over the capital, is actually the real boss of the Ling-Bao Hall. Heh, heh. Should I call you Lord Ye, or Feng Monarch?"

The voice was cold and sneaky, with a sense of viciousness.

It sounded like someone accidentally found a great treasure in a weak person's hand. The surprise, the pleasure and the viciousness of being ready to kill and rob were so obvious in that voice!

Ye Xiao was anxious. He was stunned.

[I have been so careful, and yet I am still discovered?]

He slowly turned around and looked to the direction where the voice came from.

At the same time, he activated his spiritual mind to cover the entire place.

A person in black casually walked out with his two hands behind his back. He looked at Ye Xiao with a smile on his face. He seemed confident.

It was like in his eyes, Ye Xiao was already his food on the plate. He had nothing to fear.

Only by reaching out his hand, he could capture Ye Xiao. As simple as that.

The way he acted could absolutely make every man want to punch him hard. It was the standard look of a sneaker!

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, "Who is talking?"

The man in black laughed. He was still staring Ye Xiao with that look. He praised, "Indeed, the capable Lord Ye, the Feng Monarch,

under such a situation, you can still act so calmly. You really impress me. Haha."

Ye Xiao didn't get pissed. He still blandly said, "I just asked you a question."

His voice was peaceful and calm. He was in an inferior position indeed, yet through his tone, he was still high-profiled and proud.

It sounded like a king censuring his underlings. He was full of unchallengeable dignity!

He felt relieved inside his heart, because the man in black was alone.

Most importantly, when the man showed up, his face showed that he was tired. It seemed he had just slept. That meant it was totally an accident that this man discovered Ye Xiao's secret location!

The man was annoyed being asked by Ye Xiao with that ignorant tone. [You are caught in my hand yet you actually dare to speak to me like that!

You truly need to learn what death means!]

Thinking about that, he actually forgot to reply. While he wanted to say something back, he heard Ye Xiao speaking again.

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He suddenly spoke, "Turtle Breath Art! You are from the Sunshine Sect?"

The man was surprised, "Yes, that's right. You are actually able to tell my background by noticing my breathing method. You are impressive. What a shame. Even though you are able to recognize my identity, you cannot escape this. At the very least, even if you escape, how can your house escape? Ling-Bao Hall or House of Ye, none of them could escape. Don't you think?"

Ye Xiao nodded slowly and said blandly, "Truth be told, I have never thought about escaping. I don't need to."

The intent to kill was suddenly aroused inside his heart.

[This guy caught me, and he isn't carrying a kind heart. Besides, he is from the Starlight Sect. No matter how it should be seen, he deserves to die!

Since so, how can I leave without killing this man?]

And he felt relieved at the moment. [It turns out he was operating the Turtle Breath Art of the Starlight Sect. He was apparently having a rest and running the Turtle Breath Art here. My spiritual mind can discover every sign of living things indeed, but the Turtle Breath Art can make him like a corpse. That is reasonable that I didn't discover his existence.]

He was confused about not discovering that man, that's why he said that to probe. That man was bold, so he admitted it right away. It somehow solved the confusion inside Ye Xiao's heart.

[I have been acting cautiously enough. How come I was still caught by this man?

That is the reason.

The Turtle Breath Art of the Starlight Sect is the reason. I am in a low level in cultivation. It is reasonable that I couldn't notice it.]

However, he was more cautious at the same time. He should pay more attention to information about the Starlight Sect from now on.

Just in case, the cautious boat stays safe for ten thousand years!

"Hahaha? What did I hear? You said you didn't want to escape? ... Hahaha..." The man turgidly laughed, "Can I understand it as the Lord Ye saying that he is going to keep me here forever... Feng Monarch, you actually want to kill me? That is what people usually say, the dream of a nerd!"

He called Ye Xiao "Lord Ye", and then "Feng Monarch". He was reminding Ye Xiao that he knew his biggest secret!

Ye Xiao smiled coldly. He didn't speak.

His eyes, however, became extremely sharp.

At this moment, Ye Xiao's spirit was gathering up in a fast speed.

His entire body, his full heart, his all intention, his soul and his spirit were all operating in an extreme level.

No matter who that man was, this time, he wouldn't be allowed to leave this place alive. Ye Xiao's secret had concerned too many people around him. If that man was left alive, he would definitely tell his secret to somebody else. That would bring endless disasters to him and his friends!

However, that man walked out so casually. It apparently meant he was confident. He must have lots of unique skills.

Not to mention other issues, his eyes, which were emitting a blue glow, showed that he was at least at the top level of the Sky Origin Stage. Apparently, that man had noticed Ye Xiao was weak. He was sure that Ye Xiao couldn't defeat him. That's why he walked out so casually and acted so boldly.

"It will be a death or life fight today. You should better call all your men out, lest you complain that you didn't have all your men when you are at the end of your life."

The killing intent inside Ye Xiao's eyes were getting heavier. He probed again.

It would be perfect if he could figure out who that man exactly was, and whether he did bring help or not.

"It looks like the Feng Monarch is having the intent to kill me." The man in black pretended to sigh and frowned. He said, "Actually, we can talk. We don't need to have a life-and-death battle so soon. We can just make friends and try to benefit each other from now on."

...

Chapter 264: The Ominous Star in the South Sky!

“I don’t need a friend like you,” Ye Xiao spoke coldly, “Are you alone?”

The man in black laughed and said, “Feng Monarch has a pair of sharp eyes and profound experience. You can tell where my martial art is from, yet you cannot tell who I am. If you know who I am, you would know that no matter what I do, I do it alone. I never have anyone beside me. So, if you feel that you can kill me... Just do it. As long as you can kill me, the secret of the Feng Monarch will be safe. Hmm. Is that right, Lord Ye?”

Ye Xiao was stunned. He said, “Oh? May I ask who you are? What is your name?”

The man in black said with pride, “In the ten thousand miles starlight, on the south of the sky, with hegemony in centuries, living alone for a hundred years. I am [Nan Tianxing](#)! You can see through my martial art. I am sure you know who I am!”

According to the way he spoke, he must have thought that once Ye Xiao heard about his name, even if he wouldn’t kneel down and bow, he would definitely be extremely shocked and say something exclamatory!

However, Ye Xiao said seriously, “Nan Tianxing? Never heard of it. Are you that famous? Even though you look so proud speaking of your name, I truly haven’t heard of it before! I am sorry.”

The man in black was furious as he shouted in anger, “How dare you! You just said you haven’t heard about me at all!”

Ye Xiao shook his head, “Nope. Nan Tianxing... I have never heard about it. And the poetic lines you said, it seems to be something special, but in fact... that is bullshxt. Especially the ‘with hegemony in centuries, living alone for a hundred years’. It is simply not correct even in grammar. You actually think you are a king or what? Hegemony in centuries? Or maybe you are a eunuch? And ‘living alone for a hundred years’... That is just some simple mix-up of words. You truly are not well-educated...”

While speaking, he shook his head and sighed.

It looked like he was being surprised about such a low-educated nerd being alive.

“It is a terrible thing to not be educated!” Ye Xiao said sympathetically, “You... Did you ever go to school?”

Nan Tianxing spoke coldly, “Let me ask you for the last time. Don’t you know me, really?”

“Are you famous? I truly don’t. Absolutely don’t. Totally don’t. I don’t know you!” Ye Xiao twitched his lips and said.

Nan Tianxing showed a dark face and said, “I guess I have to take back whatever I said to praise you! No matter what, you should at

least know the story about the ten thousand soldiers from the Kingdom of Chen that got secretly murdered in the Black Pine Forest! You should know the story about how the House of Shi and the House of Ming, which were two houses of the eight noble clans, suddenly got wiped out within a night, shouldn't you? If you don't even know that, I can judge you with a word — ignorant! Truth to be told, those two cases were all me!”

In fact, Nan Tianxing truly had been a name that shocked the entire Land of Han-Yang.

Nan Tianxing had done many things that made people turn pale-faced and quivering when hearing his name.

He was truly famous for his atrocity.

Except the two cases he mentioned just now, he had done countless other vicious things. However, nobody was able to deal with him. People could only let him live and kill.

Nan Tianxing had this habit. Every time when he was killing somebody, he would always use his name to scare the victim before he killed the victim. It made him feel the best when his victims became fearful from hearing his name.

He had been nobody when he was young. He only got famous when he was about sixty years old. That was the after-effect of his being nobody when he was young.

To him, it was fame, but to others, it was nothing but notoriety!

However, Ye Xiao knew nothing about this name. Fame or notoriety, he knew nothing.

No matter how Nan Tianxing was famous for his cruelty, he was still a person in the Land of Han-Yang. He was merely a cultivator within the Sky Origin Stage. He could never be mentioned to the Xiao Monarch. He was simply nobody to the Xiao Monarch!

Of course, even if Ye Xiao accidentally knew about him, he would absolutely say no on purpose, because Ye Xiao noticed that this Nan Tianxing cared so much about whether people knew about his name or not.

How would Ye Xiao let his enemy feel good?

However, one of the two cases Nan Tianxing told, Ye Xiao knew about it.

That was a battle that happened twenty years before. It shocked the whole world, and it meant a lot to the Kingdom of Chen.

At that time, the Kingdom of Chen was fighting the Grassland Tribes in the Black Pine Forest.

However, one night, ten thousand of the soldiers from the Kingdom of Chen died from nothing. The whole battle was changed. The Kingdom of Chen failed at the end. Hundreds of

thousands of citizens got killed.

People got to know the truth after that battle. It turned out that the general who led the ten thousand soldiers offended the father of some big figure in the world. That father was not capable to do anything, so he asked his son to kill the general. They killed the general and all his soldiers even when they were fighting in a war. They did it with some nasty methods!

Ye Xiao knew about it because Ye Nantian told it to him before. Ye Nantian hated the man who should be blamed so much, but nobody knew who exactly the murderer was and where he was!

Now, Ye Xiao happened to know that the murderer was actually the man in front of him, Nan Tianxing!

Looking at Nan Tianxing's green face, Ye Xiao asked casually, "Which kingdom are you from?"

Nan Tianxing's face turned darker.

Ye Xiao read the answer from his appearance. He sneered, "Well, that is unexpected. You are actually from the Kingdom of Chen, yet you killed the army of the Kingdom of Chen! Nan Tianxing, how dare you keep telling such a story... You know what, you are an asshole! You are a traitor! You are treasonous! Do you know that?"

Nan Tianxing sneered, "I am a cultivator. Cultivators shouldn't

be limited by their nationality! How can I be treasonous!”

“That is truly some shameless saying.” Ye Xiao nodded slowly. “A cultivator can have no nationality. Does that mean a cultivator can abandon his family? Does that mean a cultivator can abandon his parents, wife or husband, and children? So he can just ignore all those? Even if people kill your father, you will just stand aside being cold-hearted?”

Nan Tianxing was furious. “What do you think you know! That general pissed my father off. That was why I killed him and his ten thousand soldiers! What wrong did I do? If a cultivator cannot protect his family, then what’s the point of cultivation?”

He sounded as though his actions were just and right. It sounded like it was reasonable for him to do such a thing.

...

Nan Tianxing, 南天星, means the star in the south sky.

Chapter 265: Truly Trying His Best

"What a strong excuse! Protecting your family! You just said that the general had just made your father angry? And then your father went to you? And then you slaughtered over ten thousand innocent men? All that you did, you just wanted to comfort your father?" Ye Xiao frowned and asked.

"That's right! So what?" Nan Tianxing sneered.

"Nothing."

Ye Xiao nodded slowly, "Only because of a moment of anger, your actions led to a huge loss of that battle, and you caused the failure of the Kingdom of Chen. Hundreds miles of land and hundreds of thousands of citizens were lost under the Grassland Wolf's iron feet. Lives became miserable and people got killed. Wasn't it true?"

Nan Tianxing angrily answered, "So what?"

"Nothing. I just came to a conclusion. You and your father, you are nothing but two bastards! Like father, like son! How true!" Ye Xiao nodded slowly and said unkindly, "Nan Tianxing, you are a complete bastard! That general only made your father angry, and you actually did something so evil like that. Heh, heh, the general would surely regret that he just pissed your father off; he should have killed that old bastard! It would be great if he did! That old bastard actually raised such a disgusting monster son! He deserved to die! If I were that general, I would have killed your father, the old bastard, before I kill you, the little bastard! And if you have a

son, I would have killed him too, in case he would do anything sick to the world!"

Nan Tianxing was furious that his beard was shaking. His face was dark as he wickedly smiled, "Feng Monarch is indeed a man with a sharp tongue. Lord Ye deserves to be the no. 1 of the Three Lords. Those offensive words from your mouth were truly hard to bear."

Ye Xiao said coldly, "A man with honor would bear my words easily. What? Nan Tianxing, do you find yourself unable to bear it? Do you know what it means?"

Nan Tianxing's face turned dark as his eyes turned sharp; his killing intent surged. "Feng Monarch, are you calling me a man without honor?"

Ye Xiao spoke peacefully, "I didn't mean that!"

Nan Tianxing took a breath out with relief, yet he heard Ye Xiao go on saying, "I only meant that you don't deserve to be a man. Just because your father was angry, you actually abandoned millions of your own kin and your country, your homeland. You are not even a human. How can I expect someone who is no longer a human to have honor?"

Nan Tianxing was so angry that he started shaking.

His eyes gradually turned all red. He was about to burst into fury.

He had been hanging out around for a whole day. On one hand, he was asked by his sect to pay attention to the outside situation; on the other, he was quite a loner because of his temper. He hadn't find anything suspicious recently. That's why he decided to take a break and find this place to have a nap. Unexpectedly, he had discovered such a great secret.

At the moment, Ye Xiao was like a special hoard to him!

It was like a big pie in the sky!

However, he didn't know that Ye Xiao had such harsh words against him. It was only a short conversation, yet he had been completely pissed!

The pie in the sky was, although big and looked delicious, yet it didn't actually taste good. At least it smelled terrible for the moment!

"Good! Very good! You are good!" Nan Tianxing said it three times as his tone turned stronger and stronger. The killing intent in his eyes was vivid. He didn't even try to hide it.

The cold wind was blowing coldly. All of a sudden, it felt like as cold as winter, even though it was only in autumn!

"Are you praising me? A praise from someone that shouldn't be called a man, I truly don't feel any pride from it! Instead, I feel

ashamed." Ye Xiao looked at him coldly. "I guess it has been a long time since somebody said things like this to you? Let me guess, are you praising me because I called your father an old bastard and you as the son of a bastard? Or because I said I would kill your little bastard son? You must be enjoying it? It feels so good? Isn't it?"

While he was talking, he continually gathered up the spiritual qi inside him. He was gathering the power of his soul. The power of his spiritual mind. He felt so hungry. Hungry for a stronger power... Wouldn't it be better if he was stronger?

As long as he broke through the Dream Origin Stage, he would no longer need the gathering process. He could just burst it out in an instant. If so, he wouldn't need to talk so much useless words with this asshole. He would have made an attack sooner.

However, now he had to motivate the power by all means.

When the cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang "tried their best", they just exerted all of their physical power and spiritual power! Even though they had exerted so much that they couldn't even lift up their fingers, it wasn't really "one's best" in the true superior cultivators' eyes!

Other than physical power and spiritual power, there were also soul power, saint soul power, spiritual mind power, and even... power of luck, power of stars, power of vigor...

Only when every kind of power was exerted could it be called "one's best"!

And that was what Ye Xiao was doing at the moment.

The reason why he would choose to use such a complicated strategy was that he feared that his experience in the Land of Han-Yang would be far less than enough in front of this Nan Tianxing. Nan Tianxing was, after all, from the Starlight Sect. The martial art he was cultivating was derived from the super sect in the Qing-Yun Realm.

His background was far better than Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao was indeed incredible in cultivation, as he had once reached the peak of the Dao Origin Stage. However, he could never reach the foundation of those super sects. When he was below the Sky Origin Stage, he did defeat Liu Changjun who was in the middle levels of the Sky Origin Stage. Now he was a Sky Origin Stage cultivator, yet he wasn't confident about taking Nan Tianxing down. That was the difference between different foundations!

The present situation required him to put this man down. Ye Xiao knew he was far below the league in cultivation. Even if he died fighting, it might not be able to knock Nan Tianxing down.

So after thinking deeply for a while, the only chance he had was to "do his best" in one burst.

To do his best, the thing he needed the most was time.

However, his bad temper didn't allow him to show weakness in front of his enemy. Otherwise, he would have brought more time

for himself.

Nan Tianxing had put it quite clear that he didn't want to kill Ye Xiao.

He wanted to get something more valuable on Ye Xiao's secret.

However, even though Ye Xiao knew that it would buy him more time if he said something nice, he just didn't want to step back a bit!

That was his pride!

That was the pride that he would never give up in any case.

Once he gave up that pride one time, he would do it again and again.

Even though it wasn't sincere, it would still harm the growth of his vigor!

What he always insisted was to keep such pride straight and high, up to the sky!

When he was the Xiao Monarch, that was his style; now that he was Ye Xiao, it still was!

Chapter 266: Who Strikes First Prevails!

“Praise you... Feng Zhiling, you are asking for death! In fact, you are going to end up begging for death!”

Nan Tianxing said viciously.

Ye Xiao sneered, “Oh yeah? I really have no idea, how such a shameless, evil, crazy and mad bastard could make me beg for death?! Are you sure you can do it?”

He suddenly laughed out loud, “I guess not! At least my bones are tougher than yours! At least deep inside my heart, there is still a place for my country, my home! At the very least, I would never be able to do those dirty animal things like you did!”

Nan Tianxing shouted loudly.

The ground suddenly shook because of it.

He shouted, and the anger was vented in a certain extent.

Ye Xiao humphed and thought, [This bastard, indeed he doesn't want to kill me, because I can bring him greater profits alive! However, he is going to break down soon anyway.]

Nan Tianxing's face was cold and dark. The muscle on his face didn't move, yet he looked more vicious, “Feng Monarch, what

you are doing now is [picking the punishment liquor instead of the friendly liquor!](#)”

“Well, it is still liquor.” Ye Xiao was calm. “It can also make me drunk! What would your father like to drink?”

“Don’t you dare mention my father!” Nan Tianxing could not bear it anymore.

“Hahahaha...” Ye Xiao viciously spoke, “What? Do you feel guilty? Do you want to give me punishment liquor? Fine. I won’t mention him. Then, does your son drink liquor? Hmm. I forgot to ask first. Do you have a son? Like you, a bastard. If you have a son, the gods must be too merciful to you!”

“Don’t be glib. The punishment liquor is always not so easy to drink.” Nan Tianxing stepped forward, showing his dark and vicious face. “Feng Zhiling, you have successfully made me run out of patience.”

“Let me tell you what next. You have two choices now. One, you die. Two, be my slave and make supreme dan beads for me from now on! All the supreme dan beads belong to me alone from now on!”

He smiled with a dark face full of ferocity, “I was trying to seek cooperation with you. And I even thought about letting you be a free man to a certain extent so that you can still enjoy your life. But you just ruined the opportunity to have a better life.”

Ye Xiao smiled coldly and sneered, “Oh really? Just by saying something about your bastard old father and your bastard son who may or may not exist? Really? Bastards are unlucky, for the three of you are humiliating all bastards by being a part of them!”

The way he talked and the way he looked made Nan Tianxing furious deep inside his heart.

“You are asking for death. Don’t blame anybody else then!” Nan Tianxing gritted with his teeth as he spoke.

“What stupid thing is your father? Why can’t I talk about him? And your son, I am not sure he would like to have a father like you!” Ye Xiao said, “People like you and your father, to be honest, I feel my mouth became smelly just because I talked about you! Why are you so angry? Isn’t it a great honor for you and your father to be mentioned by my mouth! Shouldn’t you be the happiest about it?”

Nan Tianxing shouted with anger. He finally made a strike!

He moved aside and suddenly became a mass of dark figure.

Unexpectedly, Ye Xiao had moved right before he did!

A stream of cold light appeared with no signs!

Both of his hands, one with golden glow while the other with cold qi, was moving in the air!

Nan Tianxing couldn't bear it anymore so he attacked in anger.

In fact, Ye Xiao couldn't bear it either!

Because, the flame of anger inside his heart was already too big to suppress!

He felt that it was so wrong not to kill this man who was so vicious and evil.

[Even though that general had messed with your father, how could you do such a cruel thing to him while he was protecting the whole country for us all during the important moment? And you actually killed all those ten thousand innocent soldiers. They were all tough men who tried their best to protect their homeland!

Nan Tianxing... you are not human!

How vicious are you and your father?]

Ye Xiao stroke with his hand and a needle was unleashed!

Nan Tianxing was about to attack, yet he surprisedly found a cold glow appearing in front of him. Dense killing intent approached him!

He was experienced in battles. It was a surprising attack, but he

didn't panic. He just moved his body aside and raised his hand to defend. In his mind, even though Ye Xiao was in the Sky Origin Stage and was a gifted man, he was still young and not experienced enough. He thought that Ye Xiao's fame must be piled up by the resources from the Ling-Bao Hall. The strength that came from those outside resources was weak. He was sure he would knock Ye Xiao down when he fought back!

Their attacks crashed. - Pak. - With only a small sound, Nan Tianxing felt that his palm was in pain. That truly scared him. He quickly stepped back and operated his martial art to make his palm hard like iron steel. Doing so, even though the attack from Ye Xiao was strange, he was sure it would do him the least harm.

After that strike, he stopped attacking. He just moved backward dozens of meters away. He looked down on his palm and there was a narrow needle sticking on it. The needle was all black. It had stabbed into his skin and was so close to make him bleed.

A dark gelid qi was being emitted by the needle. It was shining with a dark glow like the color of hell.

“Shxt!” Nan Tianxing felt fear after the attack. Goose bumps appeared on his back because of fear.

That needle was clearly something poisonous. And it contained a strong sense of death.

If it stabbed further into his palm and made it bleed, he would have lost this hand right there. He might also lose his life because

of it.

Nan Tianxing shouted loudly and gathered his energy in his hand in order to break the needle. While he was gathering his energy, he felt an extreme itch on his palm. He was terrified as he threw the needle away in an instant. When he looked closer at his hand, there was a dark area in his palm. It was spreading up to his arm.

He was surprised and scared. However, he was an experienced cultivator. In a split second, he had already made a decision as he swung his sword. He just cut off the whole piece of flesh that was covered by that black color.

His blood wildly oozed out. At the beginning, it smelled stinky. After a while, it became normal, red and fresh.

Astonishment riddled him as he bathed in cold sweat.

[What is this needle? How can it be so fierce?

I didn't bleed, yet it nearly took my life.]

He gritted with his teeth and dodged all of Ye Xiao's attacks. He even forcibly endured some of the attacks. During that, he ripped off a piece of his sleeve and tied up his wounded hand. He raised his right hand and forced Ye Xiao to step back a bit. He asked with a dark face, "What is this poison?"

Nan Tianxing's complexion turned dark, [as if water would leak](#)

[out of it at any moment!](#)

...

punishment liquor instead of the friendly liquor, 敬酒不吃吃罚酒,
means picking the hard way instead of the easy one.

南天星的脸色,已经阴沉的快要滴出水来！

Chapter 267: Putting up a Desperate Fight

Ye Xiao raised his right hand. The golden glow increased. The cold qi on his left hand suddenly exploded and covered Nan Tianxing's wounded hand. Ye Xiao spoke with a strange voice, "Hmm? Why is this poison working on you?"

"Bullshxt! If not me, then where will it work on?" Nan Tianxing shouted in anger, "Are you blind?"

"It works on monsters, bastards and asshxles! But it doesn't work on human!" Ye Xiao laughed and moved away, leaving a row of ghostly figures around Nan Tianxing. All of a sudden, countless Ye Xiao appeared around him attacking.

The golden glow and the gelid qi were working in a perfect match.

After a short while, all the figures were gone. The only thing that remained was a line.

A line of light.

[How dare he call me non-human...!]

Nan Tianxing stopped talking. He, on one hand, tried to heal himself, while on the other hand, he defended the attacks from Ye Xiao. At the moment, he was full of hatred in his heart, yet he didn't dare to waste time talking.

Because he knew that he could never defeat the Feng Monarch who had a smart mouth by talking.

To argue with Ye Xiao, he would only be humiliated more. He would be derided to the utmost!

Ye Xiao kept attacking. The gelid qi from his left hand and the golden glow from his right hand never stopped. They were like floating clouds and flowing water. His eyes were concentrated. He was never too harsh. He just did it on a gradual pace.

He looked calm, yet inside his heart, he was a bit surprised.

The needle attack was shapeless and signless. Ye Xiao stroke it out by the method of the Shapeless Needle in the Qing-Yun Realm. In this Land of Han-Yang, Ye Xiao was confident that no matter who the opponent was, whoever under the ninth level of the Sky Origin Stage would never be able to escape it.

There would only be two options. One was to take it; the other was to block it.

The needle he struck out moved in a strange way. It was signless, nearly invisible. When an opponent realized it, it would already be too late to defend in a proper way. If the opponent didn't pay a great attention on what Ye Xiao was about to do, it would be impossible to just grab something to block it.

So, the most efficient way to defend it, was to use a part of one's body to block it. The hand should be the primary option.

Nan Tianxing used his hand to defend!

It was just as Ye Xiao expected. However, there was one thing he didn't thought of. Nan Tianxing was so experienced. He had a quick reaction. When the needle hit on his palm, he instantly operated the martial art to make his palm hard like steel. The needle didn't get deep; it just cut the outer layer of the skin.

After this attack, Ye Xiao confirmed that Nan Tianxing's true capability should be higher than what he had expected.

He should be at least at the eighth level of the Sky Origin Stage.

He should be so close to the ninth level; the highest level of the Sky Origin Stage.

By only one needle strike, Ye Xiao had figured out the true capability of the enemy, and at the same time, humiliated his enemy. He was occupying the higher position in this fight. However, he was worried.

He could never defeat a man this strong with his present capability.

He was attacking wildly, and indeed, he had the higher position. However, the truth was that Nan Tianxing didn't know Ye Xiao's

true capability. Nan Tianxing didn't dare to act recklessly because he was scared by that needle strike. Once he was healed and figured out how weak Ye Xiao was, Ye Xiao would be the one who should worry!

Even so, Ye Xiao didn't have any good plan for such a situation. That needle strike was, after all, the most powerful strike he could make. Yet it just damaged the lightest outer skin of his enemy's hand. It didn't even make it bleed. What should he do to win this fight?

Ye Xiao was deep in thought while he was attacking. The golden glow from his golden hand was becoming dim.

The gelid qi was increasing.

The whole space was like an ice cave.

Nan Tianxing was far stronger than Ye Xiao in cultivation. However, because Ye Xiao kept attacking in a weird way, he was confused; he could defend the attacks though. However, he couldn't catch up with the rhythm of Ye Xiao's movement.

His hand was wounded and poisoned. He was not sure if the poison remained inside his hand or not, so he didn't dare to take any aggressive moves. He only fought with one hand, and his mind was distracted. He felt more and more unable to defend.

After a while, he finally felt that the pain in his palm was getting

harder and harder to bear. He felt the pain, causing him to slightly lose his concentration. He knew that it would be okay. If he couldn't feel the pain from his hand, it meant that the poison was still inside it. Now that he felt the pain, it meant that all the poison was gone.

The physical wound was just nothing for a Sky Origin Stage cultivator. While he just felt relieved and prepared to fight back, he heard something. The figures around him suddenly faded away.

And - bang bang bang... -

All of a sudden, his neck, back, chest, dantian and his head... were hit by palm strikes at the same time!

All eighteen palm hits firmly hit on his body.

The strong and extremely cold gelid death qi struck on Nan Tianxing's body and head.

All that were hit were the important areas of his body!

Ye Xiao's figure blurred as he stepped back ten meters away. - Shoot! - He stared at Nan Tianxing.

Nan Tianxing stared at Ye Xiao fiercely. Suddenly, he opened his mouth and spat out a dense mass of white qi. And then his head and his neck turned hot as it emitted mist.

His back, chest and dantian were all frozen. Some parts of his clothes were frozen. - Pah pah pah. - Several frozen pieces of his clothes dropped down to the floor. They were in the shape of a palm.

Nan Tianxing's body started to shine with a blue glow!

At the moment, all of his cultivation capability was activated.

"Such a good palm strike! I have travelled a lot in the world. This is my first time to see such a wonderful technique. The palm strike and the move worked perfectly together. Even I, who is seven levels higher than you in cultivation, couldn't handle it. It was marvelous! If you are not so under cultivated, you may truly defeat me this time!"

Nan Tianxing smiled with a vicious expression, "What a shame. You are still too weak! With such a huge gap between you and me, even though your palm strike is an incredible martial art, you cannot harm me in any way."

Ye Xiao was quiet. He just stared at those broken pieces of Nan Tianxing's clothes on the ground. After the pieces fell down, Nan Tianxing's cyan skin was emitting mist, and its color turned normally fresh.

The gelid qi didn't work on him!

The golden hand didn't work on him either!

Ye Xiao sighed deeply in his heart. He had used all the best he could. It hit on the target, yet it didn't harm Nan Tianxing in the slightest. It didn't break through the defense of his physical nature. The distance between the first level to the eighth level of the Sky Origin Stage was just too much.

Ye Xiao quickly made up his mind to change his strategy. To defeat the man in front of him, he had to use his soul power and his true trump card!

He had to put up a desperate fight!

...

Chapter 268: A Sword From Nowhere

Just as Ye Xiao was about to make his second strike after making up his mind, Nan Tianxing had already jumped up and laughed in an evil voice, “Feng Monarch, you are much weaker than me. My victory is already a given. It’s better that you just come with! Be my slave. It is better than becoming a corpse!”

Ye Xiao humphed. He didn’t respond this time.

Nan Tianxing had jumped up high in the air. His body was covered by blue glow. The glow from his body was eroding the space like tide.

While his sleeve was rolling, his fight fiercely struck out.

A great strength from his hand suddenly locked on the space behind Ye Xiao.

One palm strike could actually make such a great impact!

In other words, Ye Xiao had no choice but to physically defend from that attack!

Obviously, Nan Tianxing had realized that Ye Xiao’s biggest advantage was his flexibility. If he kept fighting recklessly, it would take him too much time and effort to catch Ye Xiao.

And the sky was turning brighter.

They were making a ruckus. Before long, there would be people coming to check.

It was in the Kingdom of Chen after all. There were many strong figures here. Any strange signs could bring many ambitious men!

To Nan Tianxing, Feng Zhiling was a priceless treasure. It would be a great thing if he could capture him for himself. If somebody else knew about this, he would never be able to keep him as his own. The auction was about to begin anyway.

He would have to go and attend the auction after all.

The auction was under schedule. Feng Zhiling or Ye Xiao, Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall or not, his disappearance, even his death, would never stop the auction from taking place!

So he had to finish all this mess as quickly as he could. He needed to take Feng Zhiling down and keep him as his own. He would then pretend that nothing had happened, and he would spend enough time to deal with Feng Zhiling!

As long as Feng Zhiling was in his control, he would eventually give in.

Nan Tianxing felt heat in his heart while thinking about all the benefits Feng Zhiling would bring to him.

So he decided to use an area of effect attack and make Ye Xiao fight him face to face. [You are a lot weaker than me in cultivation. If we fight face to face, I will easily win this fight.

As long as I can push you to fight against me, you have nowhere else to hide. No matter how good you are at dodging, it won't help you in any way. You will just be beaten down.

[One absolute power defeats ten schemes!](#)

That is the rule.]

One had to admit that Nan Tianxing's method was truly the best and the most efficient way to fight Ye Xiao, even though it costed him a lot of energy!

Nan Tianxing rushed down with the vigor of great mountains.

As for Ye Xiao, with the danger approaching, he had to do something. He knew that it would cost him too much to directly defend from that attack, but he had no other choice but to raise his hand to hit it.

- Boom! - Ye Xiao stepped back several steps. He was shambling and almost fell to the floor. It appeared that he had lost the fight. His face was like some golden paper which was gaunt!

A hard crash like that would only let the stronger one win and the weaker one lose. It revealed the winner of this fight!

Nan Tianxing actually held back on his attack as he was afraid that he would instantly kill Feng Zhiling. But still, Ye Xiao felt that his organs inside his body were all dramatically shook. His arms were nearly broken.

Nan Tianxing humphed and got down to the floor with his hands on his back. He cold spoke, “Feng Monarch, I only used thirty percent of my power with that palm strike.”

Ye Xiao laughed and said, “Oh really? It seems my life is quite valuable?”

Nan Tianxing’s eyes glowed with ferocity. “The Feng Monarch’s life is indeed valuable. It is actually priceless. Once you become my slave, you will find that your life is much more valuable than you think it is!”

He put out his tongue and licked on his lips, then he smiled. “Let me tell you another secret. I like people with a tough personality. When I turn a tough man into a soft-bone servant who would kneel in front of me, a servant who will let me play and torture him without any complication, a servant who will do whatever I tell him to do... That feeling of accomplishment is fantastic. That feels so good. It feels as good as turning a holy virgin into a slut in the bed! However, it is a shame that you will never have a chance to feel what I feel.”

“Because you can only offer me that feeling!” Nan Tianxing spoke with a dark and cold face, “That is the price you need to pay for cursing me and my father!”

Ye Xiao was indifferent as a smile emerged on his face. “Do you really think you will get it? Haha. After such a long time of fighting, you have been lowering your voice on purpose, and you have even tried to control everything that makes sounds in this area. I guess you really don’t want other people to know this? You want to keep it to yourself, right? That palm strike was indeed thirty percent of your power. I guess that was because you needed to try to control the sound of this area at the same time, so you don’t have enough energy to focus on attacking! Haha. You are controlling this small space well. However, there are so many superior cultivators in the capital at the moment. As long as I focus on breaking one point of this place and shout out whatever I can, all of your plans will fail. Now you are actually dreaming in day time. What a fool.”

Nan Tianxing’s plan in his mind was seen through. That made his face turn dark again. He slowly spoke, “You can try. I promise that none of your voice would go out of this space. How can you possibly break my controlling block on this space with only your lame cultivation capability. And, from now on, once you offend me one more time, your coming life will be one bit harder!”

“Oh really? Then I must have a try.”

Ye Xiao slowly stood up. His eyes were like lightning.

He reached out his hands. His hands were like dragon claws

making cracking sounds.

His hair was flying even if it wasn't blown by the wind! Apparently, he had activated the spiritual qi inside him to an extreme extent!

The water vapor that was formed because of the gelid qi became much colder.

The next moment, Ye Xiao suddenly joined his palms!

- Crack! -

The bones of his finger made a cracking sound.

- Shring! - A long sword shining with cold glow was seized by Ye Xiao from nowhere. It was shining with a crystal glow.

The water vapor was formed into ice, while the ice was formed into the sword.

The gelid qi was turning denser and denser. The material of that sword was getting brighter and brighter.

After just a few seconds, a long sword that seemed to be made from a thousand years old ice was completely formed.

Ye Xiao kept emitting the gelid qi to nourish the ice sword.

He had activated all the gelid qi he could for this sword!

There must be many swords that could threaten Nan Tianxing. However, the one that he could take out at this moment was just this one. And it was the only one he could make from nothing within a short time.

The Ice Soul Sword!

The sword was still made from ice, but it was a lot different from ice now.

Making this sword was just the beginning of Ye Xiao's plan to kill his enemy!

He had spent so much energy and time to gather the power. The saint soul power, the spiritual power...

Now, the most important moment came.

In other words, his failure just now seemed to be real, only, it was not!

...

One absolute power defeats ten schemes, 一力胜十会, means the absolute stronger power is better than all other tricky schemes.

Chapter 269: Laughing Eight Blast; The Monarch's Sword!

Nan Tianxing curiously observed Ye Xiao's actions. He looked disdainful as he said, "Wonderful action, grabbing a sword from the air. Not bad. However, it is a shame that it only looks good. You can trick some laymen, but it just means nothing to me who is far beyond your reach."

"Whether it is useless or something good, you will learn it soon," Ye Xiao spoke coldly. He felt relieved.

[This man thinks that he is so much stronger than me, so he actually waited for me to finish making the sword.

He surely has no idea what it really means that I hold this sword in hand. If he does, he would be so regretful at the moment.]

The spiritual power inside Ye Xiao suddenly reversed. His body was not only emitting a mass of blue glow, but also some golden one.

It was like the star sky befalling to the world.

"Feng Monarch, just come with me!" Nan Tianxing noticed the change, so immediately had some doubts. He didn't dare to be reckless. He didn't hesitate. He suddenly moved to Ye Xiao and tried to grab him. Apparently, he had done enough waiting.

Ye Xiao moved aside on foot. It was just a tiny move, yet he showed an astonishing vigor.

It was something hard to describe.

It was some heroic bearing that could make him so eye-catching even inside a crowd of millions of people.

It was his unique technique.

The Laughing Eight Blast.

He just slightly moved his feet. With his fluttering clothes, he had stepped ahead confidently. It was like the running spring water in mountain, the tide in the ocean, the wind that blew through the bamboo forest, and a walk beyond the clouds.

When he began to do this, it reminded him of something he missed a lot.

In his mind, there sounded the comment that Jun Yinglian had given to this technique.

"This technique is the most resplendent. It makes people feel relaxed and comfortable. Ye Xiao, what you called it before really does not fit it."

"Well then, what should I call it?" Ye Xiao asked at that time.

Jun Yinglian's pretty face showed that she was deeply thinking. She then answered with a soft voice, "Though I am young, the world means nothing but a laugh; my sleeve flies, and I will laugh at the whole world!"

Back to the fight, in Ye Xiao's eyes, there was only the deepest yearning. He swayed the long sword and spoke in a soft voice, "Though I am young, the world means nothing but a laugh to me; my sleeve flies, and I will laugh at the whole world!"

The sword in his hand became colder, turning dark green.

The Ice Soul Sword was fully formed.

The blade was sharp and cold.

It rushed out, carrying endless solemnness, dignity and honor.

It was the Monarch's Sword of the Xiao Monarch!

It was the skill, Monarch's Sword: Here Comes The Monarch.

All of a sudden, Nan Tianxing had this weird feeling. It felt like there was a king who ruled the entire world standing in front of him with overpowering strong vigor. It felt like that king was staring at him with disdain. It felt like the sword of this king would decide his life or death!

He was obviously much stronger, much more powerful than the man in front of him, but at this moment, his mind was totally under his opponent's control!

He knew things weren't right, yet he didn't come up with any thoughts to resist at all!

Instead, he felt that he deserved to die. It felt like he deserved to show his neck to his opponent and ask for death!

He knew it was wrong to feel so. Most dangerously, he couldn't control his own mind. In haste, he bit on his own tongue. Suddenly, the blood spurted out from his mouth. He spat it out. However, he came back to himself and quickly stepped back.

He saw something cold and shiny in front of him. The point of that long sword was only half an inch away from his eyes. It was getting over him like the water falling down to the mountain.

He was so scared to the point where his clothes were drenched in sweat.

If he reacted any bit later, he would surely lose his eye for good. Even though he was nearly invulnerable, his eyes were soft and weak.

It wasn't just about his eye. If his eye was stabbed and the sword didn't stop, then it would eventually reach his brain; at that time,

he would die at once.

[That was so close!

So close!

What is that sword art?]

He was sweating and terrified. He shouted in anger, "What is that sword art?"

Ye Xiao didn't answer. He just moved his foot again. It was just a move forward, but in fact, it felt like he was also stepping back, stepping left, stepping right, and stepping beyond the clouds. He casually moved, yet it felt like he had occupied everywhere.

Even with the pair of experienced eyes, Nan Tianxing couldn't tell where Ye Xiao exactly was.

He couldn't figure out where he was.

He could never manage to prevent him from moving around anymore.

Among the resplendent glow, another sword strike came over to him. The ice sword emitted the cold qi and froze the air around it. The sword was so cold, and somehow, it felt like its movement was the gods will; it was irresistible.

Nan Tianxing knew that he could defend it, so he stepped back further. All of a sudden, his eyes lit up as he shouted, "That... is that the Sword of Soul that was told in the myth? To hold the sword with the soul; to draw the sword out with the saint soul; to be the unique one in the world?"

Ye Xiao was still quiet. His eyes looked calm. His face only showed indifference. The long sword was shining. There were some glowing dots that looked like flowers flying to the floor. It looked like full of fallen flowers.

It was the skill, Monarch's Sword: God's Will!

Nan Tianxing knew that things went wrong. He tried all he could to escape from the attacks. However, two rounds after, there were already wounds on his body. Blood came out from him flying in the air. Under the continuous attacks of the Xiao Monarch, Nan Tianxing's physical shield was finally broken!

Finally, Ye Xiao's powerful opponent got truly injured under his sword!

Ye Xiao successfully wounded him, so he attacked faster. The blade was rushing down to Nan Tianxing, and it felt so sharp and heavy.

It was like millions of mountains rapidly falling from the sky.

It was the skill, Monarch's Sword: Mountains On Top!

Numerous streams of purple energy showed up in the air.

[With my soul, I give the ice its soul, so the ice has soul, and it will follow my lead. My heart bonds to the sword, so does my body. I bond to the heavens as a whole!]

He was performing the Laughing Eight Blast footwork while performing the Monarch's Sword. He used the East-rising Purple Qi to motivate it, and used his soul to control the sword. He injected his saint soul into the sword and locked it with his spiritual mind. He was completely concentrated!

At this moment, Ye Xiao's battle capability was at least ten times bigger than he should be. In fact, it might be even bigger, much bigger!

When he performed that skill, he sensitively noticed that the spiritual qi inside him was about to decrease. He was unable to perform the Monarch's Sword for a long time!

Even though he had used his soul power and saint soul power, he still had a low foundation of cultivation!

The lucky thing was that he had finished striking that sword attack out.

The killing strike was on its way!

Nan Tianxing screeched. He didn't even dare to defend that strike. He just kept stepping away. The blue glow from a top-level Sky Origin Stage cultivator was crazily unleashed from his body. He kept pushing his palms ahead.

...

Chapter 270: Counterattack!

Nan Tianxing tried his best to defend the killing strikes from Ye Xiao, and he was dodging and stepping backward at the same time.

Facing such killing strikes that he had never heard about before, he realized that what he should prioritize was to save his life instead of winning the fight!

- Boom! -

Some glows that were similar to blood flew up high.

That was Thousand Mountains Down.

The sword strike was making its greatest effect at the moment!

Even though Nan Tianxing was superior in cultivation and should be one of the best cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang, he was still in the Sky Origin Stage. Though he had tried all that he could, how was it possible for him to defend thousands of mountains falling on him at the same time!

That was a killing strike that frightened the whole Qing-Yun Realm once!

When Nan Tianxing stepped back to the side of the wall, the glow of the sword finally disappeared. On his body, a dozen of wounds

appeared. It wasn't deeply cut, yet all the wounds were bleeding.

The sword strike of Ye Xiao had at least made seventy wounds on Nan Tianxing's body.

Ye Xiao made the last strike with a moan.

He stroke it out forcibly. He had already been exhausted, and his spiritual qi was collapsing. At the last moment, Nan Tianxing was defending using all of his effort. His palm strike was also incredible. Ye Xiao was hit, and he nearly flew up. He was far weaker than Nan Tianxing in cultivation after all. The Monarch's Sword was indeed marvelous and nearly invincible; it did make Ye Xiao occupy the higher position in this fight, however, at the last moment, when the power of the sword strike was reduced, Ye Xiao could not handle it anymore. He suffered the reverse impact from the palm strike.

It only happened within a second, but it had caused Ye Xiao to feel toilsome. His whole body was like broken. He had truly used up all his energy.

His dantian was still gathering spiritual qi like crazy though. It was preparing for another strike to knock Nan Tianxing down. However, Ye Xiao knew that there was probably not enough time for that strike, so he sighed.

The Monarch's Sword included nine techniques. In this fight, he had tried his best to motivate his soul power and saint soul power, but he was only able to use three techniques before he ran out of

energy.

In fact, he had simplified the strikes. If he wanted to strike out the full power of the Monarch's Sword, he would need to be at least in the Dao Origin Stage!

Ye Xiao couldn't hold it. He was stricken away. Nan Tianxing didn't stop. As soon as Ye Xiao's sword strikes stopped, Nan Tianxing struck back right away. He didn't even try to heal himself a little bit.

He was moving so quickly. Suddenly, he showed up in front of Ye Xiao with his body covered in blood. Ye Xiao didn't have the time to react before he got hit by a palm strike on his chest from Nan Tianxing.

At this moment, Ye Xiao was no more a treasure to Nan Tianxing. He was, instead, a sharp knife that might kill Nan Tianxing. Nan Tianxing was lucky that he didn't die a moment earlier, so he didn't dare to slow down his pace. However, he was still hoping that he could seize Ye Xiao, otherwise, Ye Xiao would have been severely wounded, or even die in an instant!

Ye Xiao shouted and spat out blood. He flew backward. Before he touched the floor, Nan Tianxing had arrived. He was in the air beyond Ye Xiao. - Bang! - He stepped so hard on Ye Xiao's chest, pushing him down to the floor. He viciously cursed, "Bastard! I am going to kill you! You little shxt. You actually caused such an amount of wounds on me!"

Ye Xiao was tightly stepped on the floor like being pinned by a mountain. He could move a bit though. However, he was still looking at Nan Tianxing with a disdainful look. He spoke with a hoarse voice, "Then do it. What's stopping you? That strike you used on me, what is it? Thirty percent of your true power?"

Nan Tianxing was furious, yet he still didn't want to kill Ye Xiao.

It would be more convenient if Feng Zhiling was alive than dead.

When alive, he could be a gold mountain; but if he was dead, he was useless.

He would be nothing but a useless body!

Nan Tianxing was so furious and hated Ye Xiao to the bones, yet he still didn't want to kill him!

To kill Feng Zhiling might make him feel good for a moment, but it meant he would lose the source to the supreme dan beads. It was easy to know what he should choose!

However, he was still so angry. He didn't have any way to vent his anger. Suddenly, he swayed his hand. - Pah! - He slapped on Ye Xiao's face hard. He viciously smiled. "I do not want to kill you now, but I can torture you like hell. I will let you know there is always something more terrible than death! Much more terrible!"

Ye Xiao looked at him coldly and calmly. He blandly said, "I don't

need to be warned about that. I know much more than you do about this!"

Nan Tianxing slapped on Ye Xiao's face again. He sneered, "You're all in my hands now. How dare you act so arrogantly? Heh, heh. You speak once, I will slap on you once! Let's see who could last longer!"

Ye Xiao humphed and suddenly spat out lots of blood. It was so red that it seemed so terrible.

Nan Tianxing was shocked. He had held back his strike a bit so as not to kill Ye Xiao accidentally. He slightly loosened his foot and tried not to hurt Ye Xiao too hard. At this moment, inside the Boundless Space, the egg suddenly flew up. It seemed the egg felt that Ye Xiao was in danger. It was shaking rapidly in the air.

As it shook, the scattered purple qi in the air started to boil.

The next moment, with a booming sound, a huge amount of purple qi rushed into Ye Xiao's dantian like flood.

Ye Xiao was too weak to do anything at the moment. He had felt that his dantian was empty, yet now he felt it was filled up within an instant. That massive amount of energy suddenly filled his dantian. It was nearly about to explode. If he didn't vent it out, he might die in self-explosion.

It was at this moment when Nan Tianxing had just loosened his

feet. He didn't prepare to defend from anything. Ye Xiao didn't show any hesitation. He shouted loudly and suddenly stood up. He struck out both of his hands to hit on Nan Tianxing's chest.

Nan Tianxing was rather surprised that Ye Xiao could actually make a counterattack.

It was a firm hit on the chest this one!

A screech sounded, and there was also a sound of something cracking. Ye Xiao's strike instantly broke two bones on Nan Tianxing's chest. Nan Tianxing flew far away. However, even though he was hit so hard, he still had the power to strike back. He was so angry that he struck out another palm strike, but this time, it was with his full power. It was the most powerful and deadly strike this time!

Ye Xiao jumped and tumbled after hitting on Nan Tianxing. He felt the spiritual qi was still boiling inside him. It was like boiling water in a pot. It was far beyond the amount that he, as a Sky Origin Stage cultivator, could bear. That palm strike on the chest didn't release any pressure from the spiritual qi filling his dantian. Now that Nan Tianxing's attack was right in front of him, he was suddenly enlightened. He didn't dodge; instead, he actually stepped forward to embrace the attack against him with his chest.

...

Chapter 271: The Killing Strike!

Furthermore, Ye Xiao drew back all of his spiritual qi including those he had used as a shield to guard himself. He was now ready to take in, rather than to let out.

It was the exact same thing he did while fighting against Wenren Chuchu as he tried to break through.

He was like a huge whale absorbing the water of the ocean!

In other words, he was once again forcibly trying to break through under such a desperate situation. If he didn't, he would have no chance to survive this fight.

Even if he could still stand it for a while, he would eventually die in the fight.

Nan Tianxing's full-power palm strike pushed the energy into Ye Xiao's dantian like high-pressure water!

- Boom! - Ye Xiao couldn't help moaning when he was hit firmly by that attack. He rapidly fell back like a fallen leaf. Nobody knew that there was a shock inside his body at the same time. The boundary between the first level to the second level of the Sky Origin Stage was broken at this moment.

Ye Xiao was truly bold. Under such a dangerous situation, facing the moment of life and death, he chose to take such a reckless

action. He was actually using the energy from the attack of his enemy along with the spiritual qi that surprisingly filled his body to crash down the boundary. And... he actually succeeded!

It was truly seeking life opportunity in death! He was rushing forward along the way of death!

When the boundary was broken, endless spiritual qi rushed into his Jing and Mai like tide.

Although he had broken through the second level of the Sky Origin Stage, he had paid a price for it. It was actually quite a huge price to him.

While the boundary was broken, he spat out blood three times. His Jing and Mai were wounded in an instant. In fact, even his organs were damaged because of that shock. Nan Tianxing's full-power attack wasn't ordinary. It was not only Ye Xiao's mouth that came out with blood, so as his nose, ears and eyes. He was apparently seriously hurt!

Nan Tianxing was surprised. He was stunned and then turned more furious. There was blood coming out between his lips. His entire body was bleeding, however, he didn't stop attacking. "How dare you! You are a dead meat on my bowl, and yet you actually believe that you can escape! I have to kill you, you bastard..."

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He looked at all those wounds on Nan Tianxing's body, especially the wounds on his slightly collapsed chest. He was enlightened.

All his effort was worth it. He finally got the opportunity.

When Ye Xiao failed with his needle attack, he realized that Nan Tianxing was in a very high cultivation level, and he must be stronger than all the superior cultivators who were in the same level in the Land of Han-Yang. Even though the needle attack was fierce and powerful, it barely harmed Nan Tianxing.

That was why Ye Xiao had made a special plan to deal with this situation.

At first, he made Nan Tianxing suffer in cold damages so that the latter would be too cautious to make any attacks. And then Ye Xiao made a series of attacks to push Nan Tianxing to defend. It bought Ye Xiao time to prepare his soul and saint soul power. What came next was his Monarch's Sword, the special martial art. It would have been perfect if he could strike Nan Tianxing down at that time, but even though he didn't, at the very least, it had caused Nan Tianxing great trouble. At the same time, it increased the chance for Ye Xiao to win the fight anyway...

That was Ye Xiao's plan. Surprisingly, breaking Nan Tianxing's chest bone wasn't in this plan.

Nan Tianxing was far too stronger than him in cultivation, so he didn't expect too much.

However, Ye Xiao didn't expect that Nan Tianxing could have such a good reaction and strength. He was thinking that he would

get an absolute advantage when he ran the Monarch's Sword. It turned out Nan Tianxing had defended against it really well. Nan Tianxing was so good at defense. Ye Xiao had stricken three sword attacks, yet none had caused any fatal damage to Nan Tianxing.

The biggest mistake Ye Xiao made was that he overestimated himself. Even though he had broken through to a new stage, the Sky Origin Stage, and simplified the technique of the Monarch's Sword, the three strikes had still ran out his spiritual qi. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been hit so hard by Nan Tianxing and been stepped on.

The Boundless Space had helped him a great deal this time.

It was a surprising situation.

In fact, even if the Boundless Space didn't do anything to help him, he could still have a chance to save himself and defeat Nan Tianxing. However, it was surely better to have help!

Now, Nan Tianxing got hit, so he was furious. He jumped up to the air and it was exactly what Ye Xiao wanted at this moment. He had just broken through the second level, and that gave him confidence!

And it also gave him luck!

In Nan Tianxing's eyes, this Feng Monarch was falling down like a fallen leaf, and he must have lost all power to defend himself.

However, he would have never expected that it was right at this dangerous moment when Ye Xiao risked his life to push himself into a new level! If he knew about it in advance, he would have stopped and observed Ye Xiao for a while even though Ye Xiao couldn't even move.

However, Nan Tianxing would never know that a man could break through a new level under such circumstances.

There was no precedent in the entire history!

In fact, he had noticed something different, but he just didn't pay attention to it.

All his mind was focused on was how to torture Ye Xiao once he captured him. All he was thinking was to make Ye Xiao beg for death, make him regret coming to this world, and regret messing with his future master!

In his eyes, there was only torture and excitement.

[I am going to catch you and break your arms and legs. And then I will fix them before breaking them in pieces again. And break them then fix them again and again. Let it be the first game we play once you become my slave!

Show me how you can resist it if you dare!]

He was just lost in such an enjoyable thought while Ye Xiao twisted his own body in a strange way in the air.

Nan Tianxing didn't pay much attention to that either.

Rolling in the air after being strongly hit would surely make the victim twisted. In most cases, they were just unconsciously doing it. It was normal.

Suddenly, there was some special aura in the air. A stream of black qi showed up and disappeared shortly!

The true killing strike of Ye Xiao finally came!

The next moment, Nan Tianxing started to screech all of a sudden.

Over a dozen of the wounds on his body started to become extremely painful, and they were all making Nan Tianxing feel cold!

It felt like there were lots of hidden weapons stabbed into his body in an instant.

As the black glow shined in the air, three flying knives shot into his chest. Twelve flying needles got into everywhere of his body!

It stabbed real deep!

...

Chapter 272: Benefit From The Tussle?

Nan Tianxing couldn't hold the spiritual qi he had forcibly gathered in the air anymore. He embarrassingly fell down to the floor like a blown off kite.

He felt his body starting to get stiff. He tried to move but failed.

- Boom! - Ye Xiao fell off and embarrassingly hit on the floor too. His bones and muscles were severely injured. It took him a long time to get up from the floor.

Nan Tianxing was right in front of him. He could easily reach his hand to touch Nan Tianxing's body. Nan Tianxing was on the floor like a dead body.

The cold death qi inside his body had fully burst.

The Demonic Blade Weapon!

It made a great effect at the very important moment!

The wounds on Nan Tianxing stopped bleeding. They became purple cyan within seconds. His blood veins were gradually freezing. After just a while, more than sixty percent of them were broken.

He kept his eyes widely opened as he stared at Ye Xiao. In his

eyes, there was only desperation, unwillingness, and also doubts.

He just couldn't believe that the guy who was supposed to be much weaker than him could actually take him down!

Just minutes ago, he was still the one who occupied the higher position in this fight like everything was under his control!

He stared at Ye Xiao and asked with great difficulty, "What... What is that?"

Ye Xiao took a breath and sat on the floor. He reached out his finger with a disdainful smile on his face. He drew out a needle from inside Nan Tianxing's chest.

It was a narrow flying needle.

And then he put the needle back into his hair.

He then drew out another and put it back again and again...

While drawing out the seventh one, he rolled his sleeve and showed his wrist. He revealed the fake skin on it, put the needle into it, and then put the skin back on. The whole process was shown clearly to Nan Tianxing. He didn't even try to cover it. When the fake skin was put back on his wrist, it didn't even show a tiny bit of flaw.

When he finished all of that, he looked up at Nan Tianxing and blandly said, “Do you understand now?”

Nan Tianxing was astonished. He couldn't believe it, yet he still nodded and said, “I see...”

And then his head fell to the side. He finally died.

This man who had been called the fierce star in the south sky, who had been conquering the whole world, was now dead in Ye Xiao's hand.

At this moment, his face became purple cyan and purple dark.

The moment he lost his life, he finally understood why he died. He died with a clear mind after all.

He got to know that this Feng Monarch pretended to fight like crazy at the beginning and then tried to look exhausted. He thought Ye Xiao was going on a desperate fight, yet all Ye Xiao had done was for a bigger plan. Ye Xiao just wanted to make Nan Tianxing treat the fight lightly. The fact was, his true killing strike was only shown at the last moment.

When the killing strike was shown, Nan Tianxing died.

He looked at Ye Xiao taking back the needles from his body and put them into his hair and his wrist... He finally understood what Ye Xiao was truly doing when he made that strange move in the

air.

He was operating the last trike when Nan Tianxing thought that he would certainly win!

It was a strike that made the final call!

It turned out that Ye Xiao could actually make such an attack under such desperate circumstances!

With only one strike, he ended the fight, and the would be winner had been changed!

If Ye Xiao made the last strike earlier, it wouldn't work at all! It only had such power because it was used at the very last moment and killed the man who was too much stronger than him.

Nan Tianxing thought that he didn't deserve to die in Ye Xiao's hand. However, it was quite reasonable since Ye Xiao had such a big plan in mind.

"Actually, you are not fully aware of what happened," Ye Xiao sneered and lightly spoke to Nan Tianxing's corpse. Then, he also took back the flying knives on that body and put them into his hair...

He looked around and made sure nobody saw that. Then, he picked up those needles that missed the target.

One by one, he put them all back to where he kept them.

Taking care of the mess after the fight, Ye Xiao took a breath of relief. He was relaxed. All of a sudden, he felt that his body was like going to break apart. He felt like his bones were cracking at the same time. He didn't even want to move a tiny bit.

As he relaxed after the crisis ended, the negative status on his body took place. He didn't have energy anymore.

At this moment, he felt so sleepy. It seemed that he could pass out right at the next moment. Although he had broken through to the second level during the fight, his Jing and Mai were seriously damaged. Thus, he didn't feel any pleasure in it.

He was lucky to break through at that very moment. The power that should be used to proceed with the breakthrough appeared, and most of it was used on the upgrade. Yet, what was left in him supported him on the last strike after all. It made him win.

Otherwise, he might not have the power to operate the last strike as he was seriously wounded. He might have passed out in the air, and that would be a real disaster!

"That was close!" Ye Xiao murmured. He didn't dare to loosen his mind. He tried his best to stay awake and operate the spiritual qi in the Boundless Space to recover his body.

There was an auction waiting for him. He couldn't delay it. It was not a good time for him to sleep and rest.

Sleeping was the most efficient way to recover himself though.

The egg had poured so much spiritual qi from the world to Ye Xiao. It helped Ye Xiao regain his capability to fight. However, the purple qi the egg released was huge. There was still a great big amount of purple qi stored in the Boundless Space. As long as Ye Xiao had time, he could easily recover from the fight and even heal himself well.

At this very moment, a figure suddenly flashed in with a smile on his face, "The well-known Feng Monarch is actually such a great cultivator. He can actually kill a master of the Starlight Sect. Well, their fight eventually benefits me... Hah, hah. It truly is my luck to have this unexpected opportunity."

This man laughed in a weird way. It sounded as bad as an owl.

Ye Xiao closed his eyes and sighed in his mind. [The fight has drawn people who should be informed after all.

I was preparing to leave right away, yet I am too weak to move myself.

Who is this man anyway?

I was fully concentrated on the fight seeking for the chance to

win. I couldn't pay attention to the surroundings at the same time. I didn't even notice when that man came.]

He opened his eyes and saw the man. The man was wearing cyan clothes and a tall hat. It was the dress of the Sunlight Sect.

...

Chapter 273: Tiger Comes down to the Plain?

That man looked so surprised and happy like he had found something extremely valuable. He felt so good looking at the dead body of Nan Tianxing and Ye Xiao who was unable to move even a bit.

He didn't look old at all. He should be about forty.

He was low in cultivation, no higher than the sixth level of the Earth Origin Stage. Even when Ye Xiao hadn't upgraded to this level, he could easily defeat this guy. However, at this moment, Ye Xiao was the one who would be easily defeated!

Ye Xiao opened his mouth with great difficulty, "Who are you?"

The man suddenly heard Ye Xiao's voice. He suddenly turned vigilant and stared at Ye Xiao. Apparently, he was an alert man. He laughed and said, "You are not trying to allure me and kill me like you kill Nan Tianxing, are you? Hah, hah. I surely would fall into your trap if I didn't see what happened to him. However, I have seen enough of your schemes."

He ridiculed, "To be honest, Feng Monarch, I know everything including how many hidden weapons you have and where you keep them."

He pointed out a finger and said, "Feng Monarch, they are in

your hands, arms, ankles and even your neck. Feng Monarch, you do have a profound thought. You actually made yourself like a hedgehog. How admirable. By the way, is there any in your crotch? I think that that would be the most secret spot to hide them.”

He sounded so wretched. He showed like he was in control of everything and he talked boldly.

Ye Xiao coughed and spat out some blood. He said blandly, “It is me who should be admiring you. You have observed quite carefully. As the monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall, I have to carry something with me so as to protect me from death.”

The man laughed and said, “Feng Monarch, you are being rodomontade now. Do you want to threaten me? Do you think you can get away by bragging? Now that you are in my free hands, if you truly are thinking about doing something against me, you are truly a fool.”

And then he drew out a sword. - Shring! - He said, “Feng Monarch, now, please take off all of those teeny tiny little things on you. Otherwise, with this long sword in my hand, I can easily kill you without moving one step ahead. I won’t take any risk. Feng Monarch, although you are a valuable person alive, but if I die, it won’t do me any good no matter how valuable you are. Hmm. Let me do you a favor then. Keep your pants. I don’t think you would hide those needles and knives between your legs anyway!”

He laughed, “I was thinking that I should let you take off your pants. You killed Nan Tianxing of the Starlight Sect after all. I am

just a small figure. You could kill me easily. I just cannot let you have the chance. Now, I will count to three. If you don't take off all those stuffs, I will kill you right away! No hesitation!"

He smiled, "Now, I am going to count. Feng Monarch, please listen carefully and think carefully... One!"

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly. "You are truly a cautious man. Is everyone in the... Sunlight Sect as cautious as you?"

He felt relieved in his heart actually.

The man came late, so he didn't know Ye Xiao's true identity. He knew a part of the truth. Maybe he just thought of something according to what he did see about the fight. He knew nothing about what had happened at the beginning.

That was reasonable.

At the beginning of the fight, Nan Tianxing was not so seriously wounded yet. His spiritual mind was all over this zone. If this man came over before that, he would be discovered by Nan Tianxing. If so, Nan Tianxing would surely kill him first.

After all, this man would stop Nan Tianxing from having Ye Xiao on his own.

Nan Tianxing didn't want anybody else to know the truth, just like Ye Xiao.

If Nan Tianxing was to deal with this guy, it would be as easy as raising up his hand!

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly because he had just put all those stuffs back, and it costed him quite a while. Now, he actually had to take them off. He felt lucky though, as that man didn't insist that he should take off his pants. With such a cautious man, the guy would very possibly make him do so.

“Feng Monarch...” The guy smiled blandly. He grabbed the sword harder. “I am counting... Two!”

Ye Xiao sighed. He didn't hesitate. He started to take them off from the hair. He moved quickly.

The guy was afraid that as time went by, Ye Xiao would recover from the fight. That would be disaster for him for sure. In fact, Ye Xiao was afraid that as time went by, there would be another guy getting into this mess.

“There is truly no such place with absolute privacy!” Ye Xiao was upset. “This is such a nice and secret place, yet today it felt like a market or something... That is so annoying!”

The guy's eyes turned sharp. As Ye Xiao took off one item, he counted once. Eventually, Ye Xiao had taken off the last item which was on his ankle. He was exhausted. The guy finally felt relieved as he said, “Feng Monarch, you are a reasonable man. A wise man submits to fate.”

Ye Xiao smiled with difficulty. [He doesn't even dare to step forward a bit. Now, he is truly a little out of my reach. I am not sure if I can kill him with just one strike.]

Now that I am so badly wounded, if I fail, I may die in his hand instead. He is a cautious man. Life and wealth, he would definitely choose life.]

Ye Xiao couldn't handle it anymore. He lied down lightly and tiredly said, "Who are you? Who are you in the Sunlight Sect? I would have never expected that there is a man like you in the Sunlight Sect."

The guy laughed and he seemed proud. "Feng Monarch, my name is Chen Yuanfeng. I am a nobody. Nothing to mention about."

Ye Xiao closed his eyes and nodded. He said, "That's right. You are a nobody. I, Feng Zhiling, has traveled around all my life. I have never expected to fall into some nobody's hands. What a fate of mine..."

Chen Yuanfeng's voice turned pungent, "That's true. No matter how strong you are, you are now nothing but a drowning dog! Feng Monarch, let me give you an advice. When you are unable to do anything, you better keep your mouth shut or say something nice."

Ye Xiao kept his eyes closed and blandly said, "That's true. A dragon fell to the seaside. A tiger came to the plain. That is what I am."

The guy couldn't bear it anymore. He shouted, "How dare you ridicule me? Under such circumstances, you actually dare to ridicule me?"

While speaking, he walked ahead.

He was angry, but he didn't stop being cautious. He didn't put down the sword in his hand. He knew that he was always in danger as long as Feng Zhiling was breathing. This guy was a man who killed Nan Tianxing after all. He knew that he might get himself killed by any reckless move.

Chapter 274: Endless Cards in Hand

Chen Yuanfeng only stepped ahead to test Feng Zhiling. He knew that the moment he felt something was wrong, he should immediately sway the sword in his hand and flee away quickly. It would be better to observe from a distance before taking any other moves.

Suddenly, Ye Xiao coughed out once again and spat out blood. And then another one.

His fingers seemed to be shaking. He let out a deep sigh. “Fine...”

Even though he didn't say more than a single word, the desperation in it was still hard to miss.

Chen Yuanfeng felt happy about it, so he stepped ahead further. With the current distance between them, he could even touch Ye Xiao's body. However, he was still cautious enough to slightly kick on Ye Xiao's leg first. Ye Xiao moaned and said in anger, “Prick! You better kill me right now. Don't you think it is obscene to humiliate a superior cultivator like this?”

Chen Yuanfeng felt calm. He was sure that this extreme superior cultivator truly had no power to even move a bit.

He used his foot to move all those needles and knives away. With a smile on his face, he spoke with a treacherous tone, “Feng Monarch, what are you talking about? I just touched your leg. I didn't take off your pants anyway. You are taking it too serious

now. How can I kill you now?”

Ye Xiao humphed and weakly said, “You better kill me now! You know what I’ll do!”

Chen Yuanfeng laughed loudly; he finally felt relieved. He walked close to Ye Xiao and got down to see his eyes. He spoke lightly, “I don’t want to...”

It was right at this moment when Ye Xiao suddenly opened his eyes widely and shouted, “Pah!”

A fierce and cold light shot out from his mouth!

It was as fast as lightning!

That was the last shot he kept to save his life.

Between his teeth, there was a needle!

Even though his entire body couldn’t move and his arms and legs were broken, as long as he still could breath, he could kill the enemy with this needle!

Chen Yuanfeng was in the process of getting down; he couldn’t even finish his words. The needle had shot into his throat!

Where the needle had just entered appeared a red dot which quickly spread.

- Klang. - The sword hit the floor.

Chen Yuanfeng's face was frozen at this moment!

His eyes were full of confusion.

He didn't understand why and how this happened.

He grabbed on his throat and made some weird sounds. He looked at Ye Xiao in disbelief. His face was full of surprise and terror as his body turned soft and slowly fell to the ground!

He never thought that Ye Xiao actually saved the last piece of needle all the time. The last strike was the killing strike. He didn't even use it on Nan Tianxing, yet he used it on Chen Yuanfeng!

Even in his wildest of expectations, he couldn't have predicted this!

It was reasonable though. Ye Xiao was now living his second life. In this life, he always kept a second plan in mind in case anything went wrong against him. This second plan had made a final call on this event!

Ye Xiao released his last strike out of his hand, hmmm, in fact, it

was a strike out of his mouth. He coughed and was almost in a palsy on the floor. He forcibly shot out the needle, and it costed him all the spiritual qi he gathered. At this moment, he was once again weak and tired.

He had never been so exhausted before!

However, he still tried to stand up in order to pick up all those needles and knives. This time, he didn't put them back though. He just held them in hands; he didn't have the slightest strength to return them.

He reached his hand to take the needle back from the purple-colored dead body of Chen Yuanfeng. Then, he spoke lightly, "You never know. I will always save a card... You don't have a card, so you died."

The danger was gone. Ye Xiao forcibly operated one breath of spiritual qi to prevent himself from falling down. Although he was so tired to the point where he could pass out right away, he still forced himself to walk out of this place.

It was no longer a proper place for him to stay.

Even to walk out a hundred meters away would be far better than staying here.

After a while, there might be more people coming. If he stayed longer...

As expected, several minutes after he left, two figures arrived at this place. - Shoot! Shoot! -

“The sound must be from here just now. It was not clear, but it should be around here.”

“Quite a secret place, isn’t it...”

“It truly is a good spot to murder someone...”

“That’s right. Let’s look around.”

“There maybe something good waiting for us there...”

“There is blood. There was a fight here. What a fierce battle...”

“This... Is this actually Nan Tianxing?!”

“Holy crap! It is him... How is this possible...”

The two men that arrived happened to be two disciples from the Sunlight Sect. Looking at the dead body of Nan Tianxing, they were extremely shocked.

Nan Tianxing might not be the strongest man in this world in terms of cultivation, but he was one of the people who were skilled

at scheming.

He was actually quite an important figure in the Sunlight Sect!

However, this important figure was now dead in this weird place...

That was an astonishing news!

The two of them were terrified; they were completely speechless. They were so shocked that they didn't notice that there was another dead body there.

After a while, they calmed down a bit and looked around. That was when they found the other body...

“There is another one...”

“Oh? This... This is... Chen Yuanfeng?”

“Yes! It is him. How come... How would he die here? Didn't our Second Primary Master send him to deliver a message? How come he just died here?”

“Could it be that he accidentally came to this place and died here?”

“That’s possible...”

They both inhaled a cold breath.

Right at this moment...

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot... -

Over a dozen figures flew into this place.

They were wearing different styles of clothing. Apparently, they were from different sects.

There were people from the Starlight Sect, Sunlight Sect, other sects and the eight noble clans...

Each of them was moving fast and quick. They were all outstanding figures. Apparently, they were all superior cultivators.

When they arrived and saw the scene, their faces all turned dark!

...

Chapter 275: Who Has Needles in the Martial World?

One of the two dead bodies was Chen Yuanfeng from the Sunlight Sect. That was fine; after all, he was just a small figure that nobody cared about. His death was not a big deal. However... Nan Tianxing from the Starlight Sect actually died here too.

Such a scene was something that could cause anyone to take in a cold breath!

How many people in this city could actually kill Nan Tianxing?

They all knew the answer to this question.

If Nan Tianxing was easy to deal with, he would have been captured and executed many times by the king of the Kingdom of Chen.

Because he was powerful, strong and experienced, the Kingdom of Chen couldn't do anything about him, so he had always been free!

If he was that confident, he wouldn't have come to the capital of the Kingdom of Chen so casually!

However, such a great figure had really lost his life here in silence. It truly terrified all of them!

Most importantly, even though all the big figures were gathered in this city, among these people, the ones who had the capability to kill Nan Tianxing wouldn't be more than ten!

Moreover, even people from Starlight Sect were included!

The crowd separated into two groups. One group checked on Chen Yuanfeng's body, while the other checked on Nan Tianxing. They were all troubled, yet they still refrained from showing any emotion.

"Yuanfeng's face looks surprised. Cautious as he was, he was still caught by surprise. The fatal wound in his throat is very small. His sword was beside him; he must have tightly held it before he died. When he was hit, he dropped it. All the signs show... that he was fully guarded when he was attacked. However, he was still killed by a single attack, and that is why he looked so surprised. The murderer must be at least in the Sky Origin Stage!"

"It was a surprise attack!"

An old man from the Sunlight Sect slowly spoke, "Such a strong cultivator actually needed to use poison on Yuanfeng, an Earth Origin Stage cultivator. The poison seems to be extremely toxic. As for the weapon that caused that wound... it should be something with a sharp point... It should be narrow like... a needle!"

He stood up. "In this martial world, who uses poisonous needles as his weapons?"

At the same time, people from the Sunlight Sect also voiced out their own conjectures, “There are sword wounds all over Nan Tianxing’s body. None of them has damaged his bones though. Obviously, these wounds were not enough to take his life. There are many wounds, but they are not fatal. What caused his death was the strong cold poison that entered his body through those tiny needle wounds...”

“This person must have been seriously wounded by Nan Tianxing too. After he had killed Nan Tianxing, he himself had lost energy. In order to take advantage of the situation, Chen Yuanfeng showed up, and that must be why Chen Yuanfeng was so surprised.”

“In the martial world, who uses cold poison needles as his weapon?”

Both groups asked a similar question.

It suddenly turned silent.

The crowd deeply pondered upon the answer to this question. Some of them just looked at each other, completely clueless. Some of them just looked at the sky, showing indifference to the dead men.

Suddenly, someone broke the silence and asked, “These two are from two different sects. How come they died here at the same time?”

This question shocked everyone.

That was right. One was at the eighth level of the Sky Origin Stage, while the other was at the sixth level of the Earth Origin Level. In terms of cultivation, an enormous gap existed between them. Nan Tianxing would never seek Chen Yuanfeng as company; besides, Nan Tianxing preferred to be alone. Moreover, Chen Yuanfeng would never dare to stay with Nan Tianxing; he was surely afraid to be played to death by the latter.

That made it even stranger.

How could they die together? Apparently, they died under the hands of the same person

Chen Yuanfeng's face was so weird!

This peculiar scene aroused too many questions; it baffled everyone.

“In this martial world, there seems to be only one man... who uses needles as his weapon...” somebody said in a low voice.

“Who?” Everyone else immediately turned to look at him.

The man was slim, short, and had a mouse-like mustache. Being stared at by several great cultivators nearly caused him to pass out;

his legs began to shake, and he couldn't even talk coherently now.

Those great cultivators immediately realized that they had been emitting their vigorous energy. The man with a mouse-like mustache was weak, so he would, without a doubt, be scared. Luckily, his fright didn't take his life. So, the great cultivators drew back their vigorous energy and asked him, "Who are you referring to? Which well-known cultivator uses needles as his weapon?"

"It is... the legendary Boundless Saint, the head of the Boundless Lake... His weapon is needles." While quivering, the man with a mouse-like mustache continued, "And... his needles are shapeless and full of forms..."

"That's impossible! It cannot be him!" They simultaneously shook their heads, denying that conjecture.

"Look, there's some blood here. Check out its color, it's certainly neither Chen Yuanfeng nor Nan Tianxing's blood. It must be the murderer's blood! I'm sure of it."

"If the Boundless Saint was the culprit, he wouldn't need to spit out blood. With his strength, he could easily kill Nan Tianxing. Chen Yuanfeng doesn't even need to be mentioned! It's impossible for him to get hurt like this!"

An old man with a white beard spoke in a serious tone.

People nodded in agreement.

The mysterious Boundless Saint had a handful of marvelous martial arts, and was at a level far beyond Nan Tianxing, it was impossible for them to have any quarrels. Killing Chen Yuanfeng was as easy as breathing. Anyway, there was no way he would utilize his needles against him.

However, if it wasn't this Boundless Saint, then who was it?

“Here!” someone suddenly exclaimed. “There are some other wounds on Nan Tianxing's body.”

People moved in closer to have a look. They became speechless right away.

They had carefully observed the body, yet they had still missed some nearly invisible wounds. Those mysterious wounds were narrow and long; they looked like needle wounds, but they were actually not.

“These wounds should have been caused by some extremely narrow flying knives...” An old man gestured with two of his fingers and said, “I think it would be like this long.”

After reaching this conclusion, confusion once again befell everyone.

[Who on earth... uses needles and knives at the same time?]

...

Chapter 276: The Boundless Saint!

While discussions were all over the place, somebody suddenly shouted in fear; that person jumped away and began to quiver.

“What is it?” Startled, somebody hastily asked.

“The... The... The body is moving... It is... melting... rotting...” That man’s face was pale, as if he was about to puke at any moment.

Hearing him, the crowd felt terrified; they immediately turned to look. The two corpses were indeed moving, and they were also rotting at a speed visible to the naked eye. As rotting took place, the bodies quivered and produced an extremely putrid smell.

Soon, they became smaller and smaller.

The crowd looked at each other; they all had dark expressions as a cold stream seemed to have rises from their backs to their heads.

Another shout sounded out as someone ran away. Some of the weaker cultivators immediately left after him. Everyone, including the powerful ones among them, had a pale face that showed a terrified expression.

[There’s actually such a weird cold poison in earth?

Who is the murderer?

This is so horrible!]

While they were still stunned in astonishment, yet another strange thing occurred again.

The man with the mouse-like mustache fell to the ground while running away; on his throat was a shiny silver needle.

Then, a bleak voice echoed out, “Ignorant bastard. How dare you smear me! Now, let me show you how my needles taste like. If you have a next life, remember! My needles are all silver needles without poison!”

However, that man with a mouse-like mustache would never have the chance to hear him anymore.

That silver needle came from nowhere. Within the blink of an eye, it took away the life of an Earth Origin Stage cultivator.

The crowd was terrified.

An old man with white beard spoke, “Boundless Saint? Since you are here, why not show yourself?”

Within a fog that gloomily appeared, the bleak voice sounded, “I don’t want to get involved with the quarrel between your sects!

Since the rest of you didn't smear my name, I don't see why I should meet you? It only brings more trouble than any good! It is always better not to meet people!"

The bleak voice gradually faded away and disappeared in the wind.

The crowd looked at each other.

That man with a mouse-like mustache was one of the weakest among these people, yet he was from the Long Clan, one of the eight noble clans. Those from the Long Clan were angry about it, yet none of them dared to say anything. They just blandly stood there, not daring to move in the slightest.

Neither the Boundless Saint nor the two big sects were something they dared to mess with.

Let alone killing one of them, even if he killed several or even a dozen, they would only have to accept it! They didn't dare to say anything about it; if they said something wrong, then their entire clan could meet its demise!

As the crowd stared each other, yet another revelation occurred in their mind.

At this moment, they all had the same thought.

[The Boundless Saint actually came to Chen-Xing City!]

[He hasn't stepped inside the martial world for such a long time. Now, he must have come for the auction. It seems that this auction is getting more and more interesting...]

[However... We have to be more careful in the auction. If we messed with the Boundless Saint, we may have to face the entire Boundless Lake. That will be disastrous...]

Everyone, including those from the Starlight Sect and Sunlight Sect, left with troubled hearts.

...

Ye Xiao was hidden in the dark. Looking at those people leaving, he finally felt relieved.

Having serious injuries disabled him from running far away. At this moment, he was about a thousand meters away, hiding inside an ordinary citizen's house.

It was a special situation, so he had to control the people who lived in that house by force. Well, with a few words and two money notes, everything worked out pretty well.

When he removed the seal he had put on them, they suddenly became so grateful as if Ye Xiao was their own forefather.

Not everyone could witness such an amount of money. Moreover, they only had to sit still and the money was theirs.

What Ye Xiao gave them was actually a tiny bit of the money he carried with him; only two notes for twenty thousand taels of silver in total!

Twenty thousand taels of silver meant nothing to Ye Xiao nowadays. It was tiny, however, it meant a huge wealth to ordinary people!

Most of the ordinary citizens couldn't hold such an amount of money in their lives, not even if they quit eating or drinking for a while. To maintain a family, five taels of silver a month would be more than enough...

After dealing with that family, Ye Xiao swallowed five Supreme Dan Beads and ten Space Water Drops, which healed him to a certain extent.

He changed his clothes and then focused on self-healing.

He had to do it after changing his clothes, because he was afraid that those men could be so crazy that they would search here...

After that fight, Ye Xiao didn't believe that there would be anything certain in the world!

Anything was possible; anything might happen!

To fully cover his trace, Ye Xiao changed his disguised face again, even though it would cost him a lot spiritual qi and make the self-healing process longer.

After he made sure that he was well undercover to the point where he wouldn't be recognized even if somebody found him, he finally started to concentrate on healing himself!

He was lost in his mind. His spiritual mind went through his entire body to check on the status of his wounded body, only to find that it was such a mess. His organs were moved to wrong positions, and his bones were broken. Wounds covered his entire body, and not a part of his body was good and healthy.

The only thing that was good was his dantian. It had been dried out, yet now it was filled with some streams of purple qi. With that purple qi, it would be easier for him to start the healing process.

He started from operating the purple qi; the energy from the Supreme Dan Beads burst out, and the energy of life from those Space Water Drops started to fix the broken parts of his Jing and Mai.

...

Chapter 277: You Know That?

If Ye Xiao only had the purple qi, the Supreme Dan Beads and the Water Drops, he wouldn't have recovered so fast. After all, he had suffered from serious injuries; he had driven his saint soul, his soul and his life energy to the lowest level, and it would have required him quite a long time in order to fully recover!

However, he had just broken through to a new stage; the energy he got from the upgrade had been depleted though.

Now, the energy kept coming up again, quickly filling his Jing and Mai. To break through to a new level was like being reborn from death, and to recover himself under such a process was a perfect method.

This time, he healed himself far better and faster than before. After only a few minutes, his body had already started to emit a blue glow as the purple qi shrouded his body. From outside to inside, it moistened his wounded body, and with the passage of time, his pale face gradually turned to a rose color.

At this moment, the sun started to shine on every piece of the land.

Time was passing.

In front of the Ling-Bao Hall, there was a lot of people crowding; the countless bodies filled everyone's sight.

However, even though there were so many people, it was silent; nobody made any sound at all.

In front of the crowd stood six men who stood in two groups.

They were all calm, vigorous and filled with pride, showing indifference to what surrounded them.

They were from the two great sects.

People from the other big sects were also here, standing in silence. Even though they were standing behind the Starlight Sect and the Sunlight Sect, they showed dignity and behaved decently.

These people stood side by side, yet they were clearly showing different styles.

On the third row stood the eight noble clans; they seemed indifferent, yet in fact, they couldn't hide their nervousness.

In fact, most of them thought of just quitting the auction and going back home; they didn't want to mess with these big sects at all.

However, what would be on the auction was all that these clans wanted; after all, it was related to the future of their clans. Although they knew that it was snatching food from tigers'

mouths, yet they had to do it.

A reason why two seemingly contradicting feelings, worrying and longing, filled their hearts,

Everybody was waiting for the time for them to enter the hall.

Far away from them, there was a figure quietly standing on a tree. As his eyes stared at the crowd, his face showed coldness and grimness.

It was in the Ling-Bao Hall.

Wan Zhenghao was as nervous as an ante on a hot pot; he kept pacing back and forth.

“Why is the Monarch still not here? How am I going to proceed such a big event without him...” Sweat came out and drop to the floor from his forehead; at this moment, he looked disturbed.

[What if the Feng Monarch failed to show up once the opening hour comes? What if the two great sects ask me something I can't give. What should I do to deal with their force?

If I show weakness, they will get whatever they want, and we are going to suffer a big loss. However, if I recklessly show toughness, I will certainly offend them, and I may get killed and get my whole family killed.

With such a difficult situation, everything is unpredictable.

If I truly offend them, Ling-Bao Hall will face a difficult time for sure.

Should I be the one to face the difficulty?

Well, they may not say anything against it, but I am actually not qualified enough. I am no longer the one who's taking charge of this!]

Wan Zhenghao nearly lost five kilograms in weight because of worrying.

On the other hand, Liu Changjun was still showing a bland expression. With a calm temperament, he just quietly sat there, showing coldness and toughness.

He acted like a lofty mountain, as if Wan Zhenghao and the crowd outside had nothing to do with him at all.

He didn't care about the current situation.

In fact, at this moment, what was on his mind was quite different than expected. [What else do I need for my assassination team... How can I fix it? Where can I recruit some high quality assassins?

What I have now is far less than what my lord wants me to do!]

Wan Zhenghao wiped the sweat on him. While drowning in anxiety, he kept murmuring, “What happened? Why is the Monarch not here? Oh, this is bad... Nothing went wrong, right? Why hasn’t he shows up already? What the hell is going on?”

Liu Changjun rolled his eyes and looked at him in disdain; he just turned his back to him.

[What an annoying fat guy!

Murmuring, murmuring... How many times have you repeated... How about stop.

Is it helping?]

Wan Zhenghao kept pacing around with his eyebrows furrowed. Finally, he turned to Liu Changjun and asked, “Liu, what should we do? What if the Monarch failed to show up? What should I do... This... This is so annoying. I don’t see any practical solution.”

Liu Changjun didn’t even look up; he just answered blandly, “It is none of my business.”

Wan Zhenghao clearly heard him; he felt so bad as if somebody forced him to sh*t. He was angry too. [How can you say that? You always say nothing, but when you say something, it is always useless and offensive!

Damn you! We are colleagues now! If anything goes wrong, none of us can get away from it. I can't escape, nor do you!

I just can't understand how you can stay so calm.]

He didn't dare to say it out though; he just stared at Liu Changjun. He knew that Liu Changjun truly didn't care about how the auction would end.

[What a bloody assassin!

All he cares for is his assassin team!

Nothing else matters to him!

Such a prick!

But... if I curse him, what should I do if he jumps up and get on top of me?]

He looked at himself and saw a huge body. Looking down, he couldn't see his feet. He perfectly knew that he couldn't defeat Liu Changjun, in fact, he couldn't even run from him. Liu Changjun's feet was always ready to sprang into action, yet he couldn't even see his feet...

Therefore, he should better not mess with Liu Changjun.

He sighed and said, “Liu, you have to do something for our salesroom anyway. Look at you, nothing is important to you... You never stop making me feel bad, do you know that?”

Liu Changjun rolled his eyes. That was all. He just kept quiet.

Angry, Wang Zhenghao shouted in a deep voice, “If anything goes wrong this time, Ling-Bao Hall will be f*cked up... Do you know that? If Ling-Bao Hall is gone, your assassin team will end too! Do you know that? Your intelligence group will also meet its end. Do you understand?”

...

Chapter 278: Wind and Cloud Arrived; Door Opened!

Raising his head, Liu Changjun finally answered, but with extremely simple words, “So what?”

Wan Zhenghao was stunned when he heard that. When he realized what really happened, he nearly died in anger; he pointed at Liu Changjun and furiously said, “You... You are such a... You are such a dumb fool... What should I say to make you understand the situation? You actually... So what? So what you say? Not important this, not important that. Then what do you think really matters?”

He was fuming in anger as he said, “Are the two great sects something we can recklessly mess with? Don’t you think they are important?”

“No, they are not. So what?” Liu Changjun impatiently looked at Wan Zhenghao. “What are you afraid of?”

“What am I afraid of?!” Wan Zhenghao eventually burst in anger. “If we mess with the two great sects, what would you and me face in the future? Do you know that? It is tens of thousands miles of fire, and tens of thousands miles of fogs. Death will come along with lives. Blades will fall on us at any second! Understand? Don’t you think it is important?”

Liu Changjun finally lost his patience as he said, “You are talking nothing but bullsh*t! What else would be the result anyway? Do

you really think that something everybody knows is important?”

Wan Zhenghao's wide opened eyes were like the eyes of whales; he incredulously looked at Liu Changjun and couldn't say a word. He held his breath in his throat, and only after a while did he finally let it out. In a fit of anger, he said, “Is it important? Why not? Can you defeat them? Can we? It is more than important! It is extra important!”

“No, we can't.” Liu Changjun finally made sense this time.

Wan Zhenghao finally took a breath of relief. [This bastard finally makes sense now. So you show weakness sometimes, eh? It won't be so difficult to explain things to him afterward. My long talk finally worked.] He wiped the sweat on him and said, “Since you yourself know that we cannot defeat...”

However, before he finished talking, Liu Changjun casually interrupted, “We cannot, so what?”

“So we will die! People die! Lots of them!” Wan Zhenghao couldn't stand it anymore; he finally snapped as he pointed at Liu Changjun's nose and shouted.

Liu Changjun calmly looked up and stared at the fat finger that was pointed at him; only coldness could be seen in his eyes.

He just stared without saying a word.

Wan Zhenghao felt like there was a poisonous snake crawling on his back; he was extremely terrified.

He hurriedly drew back his finger and sulkily spoke, “There will be lots of people losing their lives for real! Do you understand?”

He sounded much softer this time. The vigorous figure he showed was gone, and he looked unconfident.

Liu Changjun stared at the fat finger of Wan Zhenghao and blandly spoke, “Of course, so what?”

Wan Zhenghao was astonished.

He had no words to say this time.

[What the fxxk? ‘Not important’ and ‘so what’? Is he trying to let me die in anger?

It is impossible to talk sensitively to this dumb sh*t. There is no way to talk it through. What can I say now?]

[Are all killers the same like you?] Wan Zhenghao cursed, “[I am actually speaking with something that is only a corpse with breath...]

“You cannot fear death!” Liu Changjun looked at Wan Zhenghao disdainfully. He casually stood up and said, “And there is one more

thing I need to tell you!”

“What?” Wan Zhenghao was furious.

“Don’t ever point at me with your pig’s finger again. It makes me sick. Do you know that?” Liu Changjun casually left. While walking, he warned, “If you do it again, I will cut it down for you without hesitation. Do you know that?”

He disappeared in the door, but his voice still echoed out. “Fat pig Wan! Do you understand?”

Wan Zhenghao watched him left with his eyes and mouth wide opened. He was so angry that he couldn’t say a word.

Only after a while did he regain his composure.

- Bang! -

- Crack! -

Boss Wan threw the chair where Liu Changjun sat onto the floor, smashing it in the process. He loudly cursed, “What a... What a zombie face! God damn it! Why don’t you just die...”

Then, in a murmur, he continued his curses, “You don’t f*cking fear death. Fine. But you are making others die with you... F*ck! What are you! What kind of theory is that! What is in your mind...

Bastard, bastard, bastard! And you called me fat pig Wan... Wan your ass! I am not fat! I have lost a lot of weight...”

Suddenly, a figure showed up. It was Liu Changjun who came back and stared at Wan Zhenghao with cold eyes. “If we truly need to fight against the two sects and you become a traitor, I will kill you first. You won’t have any chance of survival! Do you understand?!”

- Shoot! - Liu Changjun disappeared once again.

“Traitor... Traitor?” In a fit of anger, Wan Zhenghao picked up a chair and threw it over. “Traitor your bloody ancestors!”

He was gasping.

Actually, Liu Changjun had truly disappeared this time.

Boss Wan was so angry that the fat on his body was shaking. His heart was beating fast, causing him to feel a bit dizzy. At this moment, he realized that because Liu Changjun left, he had no one to talk to. Even though Liu Changjun never gave him any useful advices, he was always listening to him. However, he was truly gone now.

Wan Zhenghao was getting emotional. With a heart full of anger, he fiercely spoke, “Bloody hell! You as an assassin do not fear them, why should I as such a rich man? I am the god of wealth. Wealth can drive spirits or gods. Whoever dares to mess with me, I

will smash him to death with my money. I will just take the thousands of years during which I have been a god of wealth as nothing matters. I never want troubles, but if they come to me, I will never show weakness... Fxxk!”

He cursed and then shouted, “Opened it when the time is right! I would like to see whether the sky will fall down on me or not! F*ck it!”

Apparently, the boss was truly pissed!

Five rooms away, Liu Changjun was sitting with his legs crossed. His ice cold face showed a smile that he hadn’t shown for a long time.

However, deep in his eyes, there was a sense of worry...

Apparently, this cold-blooded killer was not so cold after all; he was a human being too!

The sun shined upon the land, bringing about a golden brilliance.

The door of the Ling-Bao Hall had finally begun to open...

People from the two great sects surely wanted to get in first.

At this moment, someone shouted, “Wait!”

The crowd was shocked. Looking back, they saw two lines of people walking over to them in silence.

On the left was a group of people wearing white clothes, white shoes, white hats, white belt and a set of white sword and shield; all they wore was white.

...

Chapter 279: The Vigor of the No.1 House!

The only things that were black were their hairs and eyes. There was no other color.

The line of people on the right were all in black clothes, black shoes, black hats, black belts and black sword and shields. They were all wearing black.

Only the whites of their eyes had a different color. Other than that, there was only black!

These two groups of people were in real stranger dresses. They were moving slowly, and every one of them was calm and concentrated while walking in big strides.

It seemed that those great superior cultivators in front of them were just nothing.

They treated these men who could shake the whole world by only stamping on the floor as light as air.

There was a sedan among them.

There were eight men carrying it. Four of them were in white on the left, while the other four in black on the right.

The men from the two great sects half-closed their eyes. One of

them who stood in front made a weird laugh and said, “Who is it? How dare you tell us to wait when we, the Sunlight Sect, is trying to get in the salesroom? How dare you!”

Those people were still moving over slowly like they didn’t hear him at all.

An old master from the Starlight Sect looked at that man from the Sunlight Sect with disdain. He was thinking, [Look how you were ignored while speaking! You, the Sunlight Sect, doesn’t have enough influence! Watch me!]

He spoke loudly, “Halt! I am Li Wanchun from the Starlight Sect!”

Actually, he didn’t have any influence at all either!

The two lines of people were still moving gradually; they didn’t even change the speed of their steps!

They heard it, but they ignored it.

Li Wanchun was angry. He was just about to talk and shout at them, but he suddenly saw a token flying out from the sedan. A cold voice sounded clearly, “Get off!”

The token floated and moved over in the air as if there were invisible hands holding it.

The sun shined on the token.

It suddenly emitted thousands of rays of lights in an unbelievable way. After that, the shapes of four words showed up on the doors of the salesroom. A fierce, powerful, dominating vigor was shown along with it.

Everybody felt that astonishing and irresistible vigor!

It felt like this vigor could suppress everything in the world!

The crowd was shocked. When the crowd saw the four words, silence assumed its reign.

Two of the words on the left door were “The Chaos” while the one on the right were “The Storm”. Between the four words, there was a tiny storied building forming up in the air.

It was a small building, but it was grandiose; it made people feel humble.

The House of the Chaotic Storm!

The world’s No. 1 house!

Nobody dared to say anything when they knew who it was—not even the two great sects.

Looking at the four words, at the fake but seemingly real building, at the token in the air, at the two lines of men, and at the sedan among them, their eyes were full of fear and respect.

The token only stayed in the air for a while before it slowly flew back.

However, the four words didn't disappear right away. They stayed longer while the sunlight shined on them. Slowly, it covered the whole front side of Ling-Bao Hall...

When the token was back to the sedan, the words disappeared.

It was so quiet that even the sound of a needle dropped to the floor could be heard clearly.

Someone in the sedan coughed and spoke, "What a lovely day. Cough. Who told us to stop just now?"

The voice was clear and loud. It was a girl.

People in the crowd all looked at Li Wanchun all of a sudden.

At the moment, from rosy and vigorous, Li Wanchun's face had turned into purple color. He deliberately laughed, "Hahaha... That is a mistake. Just a mistake. Li Wanchun didn't know it is you who is coming... May I ask which lady is this sitting in the sedan?"

No one answered in the sedan. Only someone humphed lightly and spoke coldly, "Get in!"

The sedan was raised up again. The two lines were still standing in lines as they moved to the salesroom. The eight men who carried the sedan actually got in Ling-Bao Hall with the sedan on their shoulders!

She actually ignored Li Wanchun.

She didn't reply.

Maybe she just didn't want to, or maybe she felt it disdainful to do so!

Under the watch of all those great superior cultivators' eyes, Li Wanchun felt like he had just been slapped hard on his face. The feeling of shame almost blow up his chest.

However, he couldn't show anything; he didn't dare to. He had to keep smiling and let them get in first, and he even had to slightly bow to them.

Li Wanchun stared at the floor.

He didn't want anybody to find out the viciousness in his eyes.

He couldn't keep his eyes closed, so he stared at the floor with his head lowered. He didn't dare to look at the others.

People from the Sunlight Sect gloatingly looked at him.

[Show me how you show off!

Show me how you act arrogant!

Show me how you dare to mess with us!

Now what? Didn't you kick on a hard and burning plate of iron? Look at your stupid face... It makes me happy. Hahaha... We are disgraced too. That's true. But you are worse. We are at least in a better situation than you. You have to pretend to be happy about being ashamed. Pah...]

However, Li Wanchun was not the worst one.

In the crowd of the eight noble clans, there were a few of them lowering their heads like Li Wanchun. Their necks were covered by sweat, and it soaked their collars. They seemed to be in a panic.

They were exactly people from the Mu Clan.

In the last auction, people from Mu Clan offended Xiu of Heavens from the House of the Chaotic Storm. Over a hundred of them got killed...

The Mu Clan always wanted to send their apology, yet they couldn't. They were either shut out of the door or couldn't even find the door to the House of the Chaotic Storm.

Now, it was another auction.

It was the House of the Chaotic Storm again...

The three men who were sent to attend the auction from the Mu Clan felt weak on their legs...

They were unlucky.

In another clan, there was a young man asking with a low voice, "House of the Chaotic Storm... What is it?"

He had just finished the question when an old man beside him slapped his hand on his mouth to shut him up. Sweat trickled down the old man's forehead as his body began to quiver.

He slapped too hard that the young man nearly died choking.

[Oh my bloody young master... What you just said is really...]

...

Chapter 280: Suppression!

Obviously, none of the people from the House of the Chaotic Storm paid attention to them; they just solemnly moved forward, with not a single one of them looking back.

After a while, the old man let go off the young man; the young man was breathless and gasping.

“Do not say anything stupid!” The old man’s voice was shaking when he was speaking.

Lots of people around them looked at them as if they were looking at some fools.

[There actually are such stupid men in their clan... I guess we should stay away to them...]

The greeting team of the Ling-Bao Hall hadn’t come out yet, but people from the House of the Chaotic Storm already got in.

They were truly in a high position, and they were served much better!

Wan Zhenghao showed up at the door. He reached his hand and bowed to greet them, “Please come in, my honorable guests...”

He had no choice now.

He had been thinking about using the greeting team to buy some time for Ye Xiao, but now he couldn't!

Nobody would want a greeting team from him!

The House of the Chaotic Storm didn't have greeting team there, so nobody else dared to have it.

Whoever dared to must have been too bold to live.

What if the House of the Chaotic Storm asked, "Was it good being greeted?"

Nobody would have a good answer for that; that would be a question that smelled like death...

Wan Zhenghao had arranged a greeting team to buy some time, but now he couldn't use it...

The crowd was rushing in.

Nobody talked; they were like students in the classroom while their teacher was there!

They were actually more quiet than students!

They didn't even dare to make any sound while breathing.

Everybody regretted, [God damn it! If I knew the House of the Chaotic Storm would come, I wouldn't be here... Now I feel so uncomfortable...]

The arrival of the House of the Chaotic Storm had cooled down the atmosphere.

Normally, people would greet people they knew in the auction, but not this time. It felt like everyone was pushing the auction to start right away.

After a while, all of them were seated.

At the moment, the only sound was from the stage. Guan Wanshan was talking, and everyone else sat straight in their seats; nobody responded. Nobody even asked any questions.

Of the three rooms upstairs, in the Sky No. 1 Room, eight men in white stood on the left, while eight men in black stood on the right; they were all expressionless.

The Sky No. 1 Room was covered by a layer of silk; it seemed to be floating.

That layer of silk seemed to have separated the room from the auction.

After a few minutes, the auction had finally began.

Wan Zhenghao didn't have any means to stop it!

The Feng Monarch hadn't shown up yet.

Wang Zhenghao knew that he had to start the auction, and so increasingly grew anxious.

Because the House of the Chaotic Storm arrived, the auction would be quiet and nobody would dare to make any trouble.

It was very likely that the auction would proceed well!

Even the two great sects didn't dare to mess with the House of the Chaotic Storm.

However, they would surely dare to mess with the Ling-Bao Hall.

What if the two sects didn't get what they want and turned angry on Ling-Bao Hall...

What should he do?

The House of the Chaotic Storm wasn't Ling-Bao Hall's guard after all.

In fact, Ling-Bao Hall owed House of the Chaotic Storm a favor for what they had done now already!

Wan Zhenghao just sat in this room; he could feel the eyes from the other two rooms, causing him to feel cold and tremble.

It was a real feeling.

He felt it right though. On the two rooms, people from the two great sects were looking at Wan Zhenghao; they even knew that Wan Zhenghao could feel it. They were doing it on purpose, so that Wang Zhenghao would feel suppressed.

The suppression from the two great sects in the Land of Han-Yang seemed irresistible to everybody except the House of the Chaotic Storm.

Even Wan Zhenghao couldn't resist it!

Wan Zhenghao gathered a lot of wealth, but he didn't have much capability. Since he dared to stand out, he would need to take the suppression from all the forces!

As the two great sects expected, Wan Zhenghao was nervous.

In a corner, Liu Changjun stood there with a cold face.

He was also looking at Wan Zhenghao. He could see the sweat running down from Wan Zhenghao's cheeks.

Liu Changjun's eyes were filled with coldness. Suddenly, his hand moved to his sword and the veins on the back of his hand showed up.

It was a gesture delivering information. All the assassins under Liu Changjun's lead felt the signal from their leader at the same time. The next moment, all of them held their swords, and all of a sudden, the quiet salesroom was filled with a dense killing intent.

About two hundred assassins in different positions in the salesroom had spread their killing intent.

They were like two hundred hungry leopards.

All they needed was only an order to rush out and spray blood.

No matter who stood on their way, a dragon, a wolf or a pig, they would kill him.

They win, they kill; they lose, they get killed!

That was all!

The coldness in Liu Changjun's eyes was getting deeper. He stopped looking at Wan Zhenghao and started looking at the rooms

of the two great sects; he couldn't even hold the killing intent inside his eyes anymore.

There was a flame burning in his heart; he might burst at any second.

Liu Changjun understood the pressure Wan Zhenghao was feeling; he knew how terrible it felt.

Liu Changjun might be willing to scold or beat Wan Zhenghao up, however, when somebody else was suppressing Wan Zhenghao, he couldn't bear it.

They were after like brothers now!

In the two rooms, people from the two sects clearly felt the reverse energy. The killing intent made them show vicious smiles on their faces.

[So, they finally cannot stand it anymore?]

...

Chapter 281: Reverse? Suppress It All!

People from the two great sects sneered.

[Do you think we humiliated you?

Now you are going to fight back?

That is what we always want from you!

If you offend us first, you are challenging our honor. If we want to punish you, then even the House of the Chaotic Storm couldn't say anything about it!]

The six of them gloated.

[Dignity?

Well, if the weak one wants to protect his dignity, he should pay his life to the strong one!

Maybe we will praise you if you die fighting.

But that is all.

We may give you a bit of your honor.

You honor is nothing but a corpse in our eyes!

It means nothing!]

They turned over their heads as the coldness in their eyes became deeper. At this moment, they also released their killing intent.

[Since you cannot stand it anymore, maybe we should make it stronger. Let us help you burst it out! As long as you burst it first, we can kill you anytime we want even in front the House of the Chaotic Storm!]

It was quiet in the Sky No. 1 Room.

Although a few minutes had passed after they entered the room, all the furnitures has already been replaced.

Everything prepared by the Ling-Bao Hall in this room including the wall paper were replaced. The wall was covered by a layer of silk, and the new chairs and tables were made from white jade.

In the center of the room, there was a purple jade chair; it was a lounge chair, precious and luxurious.

A young man in white clothes was sitting on it quietly with a smile on his face; he looked pretty handsome. He had a dark hair yet a white skin, and his long eyebrows connected at his temples; in his eyes, there was profoundness.

A sense of fun and sorrow mixed deep within his eyes.

He just sat there in silence, watching the incense burning on the table. His eyes were clear, and the white robe on him made him look like a god.

The smoke of the incense was rising up and turning into a straight line. When it went higher, it started to disperse.

In the smoke, his eyes seemed to lose its focus.

At this moment, the smoke's path seemed to have been disturbed. The straight line began to move over to the young man in white.

The man finally looked up with a smile on his cheek.

The smile showed something deep.

Behind him, there was a girl in white standing there. She noticed the man's change, so she looked up to the door and said, "What a powerful killing intent. Such vigor! I wonder which great cultivator is here? The thing that we don't like the most is this kind of breath."

It was lightly spoken.

She didn't even move her feet a bit. But casually, her voice went around in the air of the whole salesroom.

It was just some simple words, and everybody clearly heard it.

The beautiful voice made everyone feel comfortable.

However, the six men from the two great sects lowered their heads all of a sudden when they heard these words.

They were shocked and terrified.

The voice of the girl was beautiful, but it carried a message of blood!

There were only two females in the House of the Chaotic Storm. One of them was Wan of The Cloud, while the other one was Xiu of the Heaven.

The voice must have belonged to one of them.

It was either Wan of the Cloud or Xiu of the Heaven.

No wonder the House of the Chaotic Storm would come in such a high profile way.

When all of them were praising how beautiful the voice was, they

suddenly understood something. When they looked at the Sky No. 1 Room, they acted more cautiously.

Apparently, it was a voice of power even when it was softly said.

It wasn't heavy words, yet the threat in it was clear. It made people feel scared.

[Since the House of the Chaotic Storm says so, then continuing our suppression would likely get them offended and turn to us!]

Nobody dared to challenge the two ladies in the House of the Chaotic Storm.

Whoever dared would end up dead!

The two great sects knew that the House of the Chaotic Storm wasn't happy about how they suppressed Ling-Bao Hall.

They might get punished.

Understanding this, they immediately stopped.

When they stopped the suppression, the two hundred assassins of Liu Changjun lost control. They accidentally emitted all of their killing intent, causing the entire salesroom to be filled with and cruel aura all of sudden.

It wasn't truly cold as temperature dropped; it felt cold because of the killing intents.

All the people there were cultivators, so they immediately knew what was going on; they didn't show much surprise anyway!

Liu Changjun took in a deep breath and shouted, "CALM DOWN!"

In the silence, such a shout was like a lightning, shocking the people inside the salesroom.

But because of that shout, all of the assassins calmed themselves down, enabling them to draw back their killing intent. In an instant, the salesroom seemed to have regained its tranquility.

The hands of the assassins eventually let go of their swords.

Everyone thought that a fight could have broken out at any moment. That didn't happen though.

Wan Zhenghao sighed in relief.

The suppression on him finally disappeared; he looked to where Liu Changjun stood.

Liu Changjun was standing in the shadow, and because of that, Wan Zhenghao couldn't see him at all. However, Wan Zhenghao

felt warmth in his heart this moment.

[The bastard cares about me after all. He treats me as his own brother; he just doesn't know how to express his feelings. That is all.

I think it is good enough for me!]

People always feel satisfied when they lower their standard. Liu Changjun had only done Wan Zhenghao a small favor, but the latter felt grateful nonetheless. That seemed too easy anyway!

Wan of the Cloud looked around the entire salesroom and then back to her room.

...

Chapter 282: Tuning Hammer Rises

Everyone understood why such a heavy killing intent suddenly appeared; they didn't care about the details though.

After all, in such a big auction, there were always some measures in case things escalated.

An old man with white beard from the Sunlight Sect asked, "May I ask which lady it is in the Sky No.1 Room, Wan of the Cloud or Xiu of the Heaven?"

And then he smiled and said, "I am Sun Changlong. I have no offensive intentions, I just want to visit you, my lady. Heh, heh. We, the Sunlight Sect, has been a friend to you for thousands of years. We are old friends."

In the Sky No. 1 Room, the young man in white clothes closed his eyes; he was calm and peaceful. It seemed like he didn't hear the old man, or perhaps he just didn't care.

The girl in white saw the young man's face, and then she answered, "I am Wan of the Cloud. It is simply an auction here. Please don't bring up other issues."

Sun Changlong took a breath out and said, "Thank you, my lady."

On the other side, people from the Starlight Sect also felt

relieved.

[So it is Wan of the Cloud?

That is great!

If it is not Xiu of the Heaven, it means we are fine.]

As it was said, Wan of the Cloud was gentle. She wouldn't kill people if it wasn't necessary.

Since it was her in this auction, things would be easier to let go.

If Xiu of the Heaven was here, things would be much more difficult to end.

At this moment, a hammer hit on the desk.

- Bang! -

The sound had shocked everybody.

Since killing intent had filled the whole place, Guan Wanshan, the big master who stood on the main stage, was scared. At the moment, his pace was false; clearly, he knew what was happening, and that was why he felt terrified.

However, now that everything had turned to normal, with the Tuning Hammer in hand, everything else didn't matter.

In his mind, there was only one thing that mattered: the auction. No other things mattered to him.

Everything was for this auction!

He just wanted this auction to become a legend!

He wanted it to be a legend that would never die!

Nothing else mattered.

He wouldn't think about anything else, not even if he would die after the auction!

Aside from the people from all those sects and cultivators who were living in seclusion, there was another group of people. They were people who represented the government, people from the Kingdom of Chen. No other country attended this auction; after all, the Kingdom of Chen was fighting against several countries in this world. If Ling-Bao Hall allowed other countries to attend this auction, it would be treason.

Some of them were from the royal family, while the others were from some officials' family. However, none of them held true power in the kingdom.

If this group of people showed up in other circumstances, they would be the most important figures. However, in this place, they were near to nothing; they were all just seated in the corner.

Even some seats in a corner were actually good to them.

There were three princes among them, and the others were from some officials' family, including Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang.

The royal family didn't attend the auction in the name of the royal family, and because of that, the three princes had tried so hard to get in here.

They clearly knew what sort of auction it would be, so none of them expected that they could get something good. However, if they could meet and make friends with some great cultivators, that would be a huge accomplishment.

They were confident that as princes, as long as they showed good intents, people would be eager to follow them.

Different men had different plans.

Around the three princes, there were several young men who were sons of some important officials. Beside them were Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang who sat together and were now staring at Guan Wanshan. Both of them was concentrated on the auction.

Zuo Wuji looked calm and casual, while Lan Langlang seemed nervous.

Lan Langlang's head was all healed; although his hair hadn't fully grown, it was now dark and healthy, far better than what it used to be in the past. He acted with the pride of being a man in a decent family, and he seemed to be a different person now.

On the other side, Bing Xinyue and Wenren Chuchu sat in silence.

They were both expecting something from the auction.

However, Wenren Chuchu wasn't acting high profile like she had done last time. They just sat there in silence, waiting and thinking.

Contrary to Bing Xinyue, Wenren Chuchu, Zuo Wuji, Lan Langlang and the three princes showed fear and nervousness on their faces.

They didn't know what they should do.

When they entered this place, they realized that the martial world wasn't like what they expected at all.

In their mind, the martial world should be "the world of martial art cultivators".

[Those cultivators are low-educated. They know so little and don't even know how to write. They separate into several gangs and build up some forces. They fight around and kill for some tiny profits...]

[Most of them only fight well, but are not that intelligent.]

[They are easy to recruit.]

[As the old saying states, whoever is good at martial arts can work for the royal family. If you give them a little bit of hope and let them see the chance to be rewarded, they will run over to you and will serve you with their lives like bees flying around honey...]

...

Those were what the princes used to hear about.

That was like common sense to them!

As such, they might show respect to people of the martial world, but deep inside their hearts, they were disdainful.

In fact, what they learnt was right when it referred to some of the cultivators. Many of them were just like that; they worked for the rich and those who had political powers.

They might fight for different things: money, beauty, power,

emotion, threat and respect!

However, those were only cultivators in low positions in the martial world.

...

Chapter 283: Storms Are Not Meant to Be Chaotic; The Martial World Is Not the World!

Cultivators in low positions included those ordinary cultivators: Human Origin Stage cultivators, Earth Origin Stage cultivators and even Sky Origin Stage cultivators like Guan Zhengwen from the Crown Prince's Palace and Master Sun from the royal family. Some of them were actually powerful and strong, some of them were already in the top range of the Land of Han-Yang, yet they would still bow to the royal power.

However, these martial world people that the three princes saw today were quite different than what they thought.

Those men who came to this auction were all from big sects, secret sects, noble clans and conquerors of different regions—all of them were extraordinary.

They were beyond the mortal world. Normal people were ants to them, and mortal issues meant nothing to them.

They were not even close to “poor educated”!

Let alone those great cultivators, those normal disciples from those sects were all well educated and cultivated. Nearly all forces had their own schools to teach their young generations.

Those great sects were doing even more. If they didn't study

hard, how could they understand those martial arts books? A minor mistake on understanding would lead them to death.

In some myth, somebody who was poor educated suddenly became a superhero just because he found some book of some great martial art...

Well, that was very likely fake.

In this very special day and place, the prices saw those people of the martial world and embarrassingly discovered that their bloodline seemed to be nothing in those men's eyes.

Some cultivators might be less influential than the government, but they would kill anybody who messed with them—even people from the government!

Whoever was qualified enough to join this auction really cared nothing about the “royal power”.

The princes felt frustrated.

They had planned to recruit some strong men, however, they found out that the royal blood in them that they had proudly depended on was actually nothing useful. They wished they hadn't come!

They would rather live in the dream of “royal blood beyond all” than know the cruel reality!

In fact, not all the princes felt frustrated. In the corner there a corner sat a teenager; he was different. He was so interested in all that was happening.

He was the youngest son of the king, and because of that, he was also the most ignored prince.

He was the only prince that had no power to snatch the crown!

His name was Chen Zhi.

The name somehow showed the will of the king. [You have three older brothers. Even if you have a big [ambition](#), you have to [sink](#) it. I don't want to see my sons fighting each other.]

At the moment, this little prince was zesty, and he didn't feel anything wrong about the settlement, even though Ling-Bao Hall seemed to have treated him poorly. After all, he was only ten years old, and such a big event was already opening his eyes.

...

The auction began.

Guan Wanshan took out the first item. It was the supreme dan beads that shocked the world during the last auction, the Supreme Pei-Yuan Dan!

The atmosphere was heated. It was no longer silent.

“Twenty million taels!”

“Thirty million taels...”

Bids sounded here and there as the prices went higher and higher. The amount being spoken out was unbelievable in normal days, yet today it came out so easily. As people were so enthusiastic, seditious words came out from Guan Wanshan's mouth like fuel to fire. It was just the first item, yet it had already caused great tension in the auction! Even the most valuable items in normal auctions couldn't do it!

Wan Zhenghao was still nervous.

Luckily, Ye Xiao arrived when the second supreme dan bead was on.

Today, the Feng Monarch, with his clean and white robe, was high profile. He stood straight up and kept a smile on his face as he casually walked up on the stairs.

Suddenly, both of his eyes lit up.

He saw Wenren Chuchu and Bing Xinyue.

They were both in white clothes. With eyes that seemed to be filled with complicated emotions, they stared Feng Zhiling who was walking upstairs.

Wenren Chuchu tried so hard to suppress the feeling inside her heart, but it didn't work well. As for Bing Xinyue, she instantly controlled her own emotion.

They lowered their heads and focused on Guan Wanshan and the items on the stage.

The auction was on heat; there was no other people who had noticed Feng Zhiling, even though he was high profile!

After all, the supreme dan beads were too attractive!

Ye Xiao walked to the Sky No. 1 Room directly. Two strong men in black stopped him and shouted, "Stop!"

The shout wasn't loud, yet the people looked over to them anyway as the Sky No. 1 Room was one of the focal points today.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I am the monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. My name is Feng. There is something I would like to talk with your master."

Ye Xiao spoke in a calm and casual manner.

After a few seconds, a clear voice sounded from inside the room.
“What is it?”

Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a few seconds and slowly said, “Storms are not meant to be chaotic; the martial world is not the world.”

When Master Bai heard that, his eyebrows rose; clearly, he was surprised. While looking at the door, he lightly spoke, “Who is that?”

Wan-Er knew what he wanted, so she softly said, “Please come in, Feng Monarch.”

...

In people’s eyes, this Feng Monarch only said something before he got in the room; they didn’t even know what he had said.

They were all shocked though.

[Who is this Feng Monarch?

How come he is so highly treated?

Does this Feng Monarch have any secrets?]

People from the Sunlight Sect and the Starlight Sect were

astonished when they saw this scene.

...

Zhi, 志, means ambition.
Chen, 辰, pronounces the same as 沉, which means sink.

Chapter 284: Meet Again

Nobody dared to eavesdrop Ye Xiao's talk because they didn't want to mess with the House of the Chaotic Storm. In fact, it wasn't easy for them to do so anyway, because the space around the Sky No. 1 Room was blocked.

The crowd only saw Feng Zhiling say something before he casually walked straight into the room.

As his clothes fluttered, he disappeared from people's sight.

At this moment, people from the two great sects went blank. [What the hell is this? Why can this Feng Monarch be so close to the House of the Chaotic Storm?]

...

When Ye Xiao entered the room, he saw a man in white quietly facing a strange Chinese zither. There was a censer on the table where the zither was on. Its smoke flew everywhere in the room, making it feel like a place beyond reality.

Even though the auction was noisy outside, the silence made it seem like even the sound of the needle touching the ground could be heard.

And that was just between a door.

Two sides were like a market and a forest.

When he stepped in, Ye Xiao realized something. He found that... the man in white looked familiar to him.

It seemed he had seen him somewhere before, but no matter how he tried, he could only think of a dim white figure. He just couldn't remember it clearly.

[What is going on?

That is weird!]

Ye Xiao couldn't recognize Master Bai.

However, he remember one thing.

It was the "One Sight Dreaming"!

The weird martial art inthe myth.

He also roughly remember something about what happened that night. He couldn't remember it clearly, but he was sure something had happened.

After that, he noticed something from the eyes of the young man in white.

However, he still couldn't remember what really happened that night.

He did once remember the conversation on that day, but he forgot it all. Apparently, he had been affected by some strange martial art. The East-rising Purple Qi was indeed a marvelous martial art and it could mostly protect him from other martial arts. However, he was too weak. The memory of that conversation had vanished as time passed.

He still felt tense when he saw Master Bai.

Although he didn't remember anything about Master Bai, he was sure that he had met him before. He must have talked to this man on that night.

He was one hundred percent sure about it!

When Master Bai saw Feng Zhiling, confusion clouded his mind as he said with a smile, "Feng Monarch?"

He didn't stand up though. He just kept sitting on his chair, and he didn't even move a bit. However, he made people feel that he had already showed his respect.

And it brought about a pleasant feeling to people.

While he was talking, his eyes were in peace as he looked at Feng Zhiling. The hair that lingered in front of his eyes were like the smoke from the sender, and his fringe was slightly floating.

Ye Xiao stared back at him peacefully and then spoke with a smile, “Master Bai?”

Master Bai was still smiling, but his eyes were different. They were not like peaceful water in the lake anymore. They became like the running tide, and the waves rushed to the sky rolling.

Ye Xiao felt like his eyes were stabbed, so he drew back his focus. That called an end to the eye contact between them.

Master Bai smiled and said, “Please have a seat, Feng Monarch.”

As he was speaking, a chair showed up on the back of Ye Xiao.

This chair suddenly showed up. Even though Ye Xiao was experienced, he couldn’t figure out how it was done.

It wasn’t important anyway. Ye Xiao knew the power of the House of the Chaotic Storm. He knew he wasn’t a match to it. In fact, the more powerful and mysterious it was, the better for Ye Xiao under the current situation.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, “I don’t think there will be lots of people who have the honor to sit with Master Bai, am I right? Should I show flattery?”

And then he casually sat down.

Master Bai was still bland; he didn't care at all. In fact, he was paying attention to every move of the other party: the every expression on his face and every spot on his clothes.

He was even noticing his mouth, tone, emotion when he talked.

He did all this for only one thing, yet he didn't get it yet!

When Ye Xiao sat down, Master Bai said with a smile, "Certainly. Not everyone is qualified enough to sit in front of me. In fact, there are even less who can talk casually like you in front of me."

Ye Xiao laughed, "Then I should thank you for showing me mercy, as I am acting too boldly. However, in front of you, the person who is able to control the whole world, anybody would go crazy because of the pressure."

Master Bai smiled. This time, it was a smile with tiredness.

Ye Xiao found that Master Bai was actually a person who liked to smile. Every smile on his face represented different things.

Nobody was able to read his mind, and he would not allow anybody to.

Master Bai smiled with tiredness and spoke again, “Feng Monarch, did you meet me somewhere before?”

Ye Xiao was stunned, “No. Why?”

Master Bai spoke blandly, “You did!”

He was so confirmative, like nobody was allowed to question him.

In his eyes, sharpness showed up.

At this moment, the vigor of the well-known Master Bai who controlled the whole world finally appeared!

Ye Xiao frowned. “To be honest, I do have a feeling like I have known you for some time. However, I don’t remember meeting you anywhere. I don’t think it is appropriate to say that I met you before as I cannot be sure about it.”

...

Chapter 285: Dozens Red

Ye Xiao was talking tactfully. He denied that he had met Master Bai before, and at the same time, raised his status. [You may be the top attraction and the most powerful person, but I don't want to be tuft hunting. Trying to get close to a man in high social position just because of a feeling is disgusting!]

He then smiled bitterly and said, "Please don't laugh at me. I am always retentive. In fact, I once called myself the most retentive person in the world. Normally if I met someone, I would never forget him. It would never be just a dim image. Master Bai, you are such an outstanding man... If I have met you before, I wouldn't forget.

"However, I just feel like I know you. I don't think I can remember where I have met you in the past. That is weird. You said we met before. Could you please give me a hint? Maybe it would remind me something."

Ye Xiao frowned and looked troubled like he was thinking so hard.

Master Bai became a little bit peaceful now. That was a fair explanation. [Whoever saw me would forget me very soon. The problem is... Where did this guy meet me? He doesn't remember. That is normal. How come I cannot remember it either? That is strange!]

Master Bai thought for a while. He didn't keep talking about this

topic though. He spoke blandly, “Feng Monarch, you just said something. Storms are not meant to be chaotic; the martial world is not the world... Where did you hear such words? Do you know what they represent? Do you know the meaning behind them?”

Ye Xiao knew it was an important moment now.

If he couldn't give a good answer to that, he would be kicked out of the room or even be killed instantly. Such a conclusion wasn't impossible.

He thought for a while and then cautiously spoke, “I met someone.”

He paused, but nobody replied to that.

Master Bai and Wan-Er were just listening quietly, waiting for what Ye Xiao would say.

It cooled down the conversation though!

Ye Xiao expected that Master Bai or Wan of the Cloud would ask him who, so he would continue by answering them. When someone is telling story, sometimes he would stop and people will ask him “what next's”. It arouses the interest of the story teller. However, the two listeners in front of Ye Xiao didn't want any interaction.

Ye Xiao surely couldn't stop it; he had to go on by himself, “His

name is Dozens Red.”

“Dozens Red...” Master Bai murmured.

Wan-Er raised her head and looked at Ye Xiao.

“Dozens Red and I had lived together and supported each other for quite a long time. We were such close friends. One day, he was killed by an assassin, but before he died, he said something to me...”

Ye Xiao talked with grief. At least, he looked grieved.

Master Bai’s eyebrows moved a bit.

Wan-Er’s face turned dark and she asked slowly, “What did he say?”

Finally, someone asked a question!

Ye Xiao sighed and said, “He said... ‘If one day you will meet my master, please tell him that I understand it. Storms are not meant to be chaotic; the martial world is not the world... It is a shame that I understood it too late’...”

Ye Xiao finished.

Wan-Er was solemn; she wasn't as calm as before. Master Bai was still calm, but he couldn't stop his eyebrows moving.

Ye Xiao continued, "I didn't understand what it meant. I didn't know who his master was, so I was confused. That is why I haven't done anything after that. Today, I saw the House of the Chaotic Storm, then, I started to understand it... His master is very possibly the world-shocking Master Bai, right?"

Master Bai's face looked indifferent. He didn't talk at all.

His eyes seemed to be getting more profound and sharper. He looked at the smoke from the censer, unmoving and without letting out a single word.

Wan-Er's face looked weird.

It seemed like she was thinking of somebody and something a long time ago...

In fact, Dozens Red was not the full name.

That person's real name should be Dozens Red Dust...

About hundreds of years earlier, Dozens Red Dust was a ringleader who worked for Master Bai. He had followed Xiu of the Heaven once. He was an important figure in the House of the Chaotic Storm.

However, the House of the Chaotic Storm disbanded for some reason once. People went to different directions, and everyone headed to different places.

When Master Bai returned to the mortal world, he had thought about gathering all those men that he had left. However, it had been too long that they were all gone now.

Now, he finally heard something about his man, yet it was the death of this man. The person who told him so was the monarch of this salesroom, Feng Zhiling!

Among all the words he said, the two lines were the most important.

The last time when Master Bai made a collapse to the world, he saw the Heavenly Mystery emitting a glow in the sky. He said something, “Storms are not meant to be chaotic... The martial world is not the world!”

He had believed that it was his last time to make a collapse.

When he said those words, he thought the House of the Chaotic Storm could finally call an end, and the collapse might not be the end of the world.

He knew that he would eventually go back to make war in the Outer Nine Sky.

As long as he got the Heavenly Mystery, the world would be under his control. The martial world was not the world. The martial world was, after all, too small for him.

After he said those words, he disbanded the House of the Chaotic Storm.

In fact, he was planning to return to where he belonged with the Heavenly Mystery.

However, unexpectedly, he lost the Heavenly Mystery. That was why he had to rebuild the House of the Chaotic Storm to make another collapse!

Back to the old days when they disbanded, those important figures all heard what Master Bai said.

They went to different places since then, but they all remember the last words they heard from their master.

The words “storms are not meant to be chaotic; the martial world is not the world” had many different explanations.

That was the words from a god-like master after all.

...

Chapter 286: Your Purpose?

The world's most powerful force disbanded after those words appeared. How could that not make them special?

People wondered if they could find some secrets behind those words if they could truly comprehend it.

They thought that even if they couldn't be as powerful as the master, they would surely become stronger.

That was why those words became a treasure code after Master Bai disappeared. Nobody truly gained anything from it though. In fact, many people died when seeking the way to understand those words!

After a while, Master Bai turned his eyes to Ye Xiao from the floating smoke. He said blandly, "Dozens Red... Where did you meet him?"

And then he murmured to himself, "It shouldn't be in the Land of Han-Yang. It should be in the Qing-Yun Realm."

Ye Xiao was stunned.

He did meet Dozens Red in the Qing-Yun Realm. Back then, he hadn't become the Xiao Monarch yet.

Master Bai was lost in thought. He then spoke peacefully, “Dozens Red, he... He had nearly reached the peak in cultivation back then. He should have broken through not after long.”

And then he looked at Ye Xiao and asked, “You are from the Qing-Yun Realm. Am I right?”

And then he continued, “But you are so weak now... Were you stricken down?”

Ye Xiao was shocked.

Master Bai truly had a rigorous mind.

He had actually conjectured a lot of things from only one thing that Ye Xiao told him. He was not yet finished, but what he had spoken had already hit on Ye Xiao’s weak point. No matter what, Master Bai made Ye Xiao feel scared.

Master Bai didn’t finish the conjecture yet.

“When you met Dozens Red, it should be dozens of years ago, or maybe a hundred years ago... So, you shouldn’t look like this. You are in disguise right now,” Master Bai spoke blandly. He looked at Ye Xiao and asked, “That is why I feel weird that I have met you but remember nothing. I think we have met a long time ago. Hmmm. You met me before.”

“Then who are you? I mean, who were you back then when you

were with Dozens Red?”

This question made Ye Xiao feel that Master Bai's eyes were sharp like hell. His eyes were like thunders and lightnings locking at Ye Xiao's eyes.

At this moment, Ye Xiao had a strange feeling.

The feeling was... the way Master Bai looked at him was like a lightning from the sky enlightening his heart. It revealed all the secrets in his heart! No one could stay calm under such a stare.

Ye Xiao moved aside his eyes to avoid looking in the other party's eye. He once again got away from the eye contact.

In fact, he wanted to go on with it.

He didn't want to show weakness.

However, Master Bai's eyes were profound like the night sky full of stars. Ye Xiao couldn't bear it.

Ye Xiao knew that he was doing great in cultivation, but his mind power was absolutely not a match to Master Bai.

If he kept staring at those eyes, he might expose the secrets in his heart. Even though he didn't want to, he chose to get away.

Wan-Er felt it unbelievable though; her eyes were filled with astonishment.

Her master has yet to recover to the most optimum state, but nobody had ever turned away from his stare.

That stare of Master Bai was called Soul Sight!

If Master Bai was in a perfect condition, he could block one's soul by only looking at him. The one who was blocked would not be able to move, and Master Bai would know all the secrets inside that person's heart.

Even though he wasn't fully recovered and couldn't block someone and see through one's mind, the power he had should still be enormous.

Under such a stare, no one could hide any secrets!

However, Feng Zhiling just moved aside his head and got away from the stare.

He did it in a perfect way, casual and easy. That was outstanding and impressive.

Master Bai was also surprised. He looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Feng Monarch is indeed an outstanding man."

Ye Xiao said, “I am flattered. I happened to have some experience in mind cultivation.”

Master Bai smiled blandly, “However, it isn’t enough. That is just some little trick in front of me.”

He talked peacefully, but the words from his mouth was overwhelming.

“That’s true. Master Bai is like a god. You are way beyond our reach.” Ye Xiao frowned and slightly nodded. He was acting casually.

Apparently, he was saying, “well, you might be a god-like person, nit I am not bound to be weak”.

Master Bai obviously understood the meaning behind these words. A smile appeared in his eyes which then turned into coldness. He said, “You came to me with the words that I once said before. You got in, and I believe that you are not just here to tell me this. You are after something else, that is why you want to get in.”

“You are a wise man.” Ye Xiao nodded.

“Those two sects were suppressing Ling-Bao Hall,” Master Bai blandly spoke.

Ye Xiao answered, “Yes, they are.”

Master Bai looked at Feng Zhiling's face with both of his sharp and cold eyes. He blandly said, "Ling-Bao Hall has been forced to fight, but it is never going to defeat the two great sects. Even when fighting against one of them, you will surely fail."

Ye Xiao nodded in agreement.

Master Bai smiled casually and said, "So, you came in for my help. Facing the two sects at the same time, there is no one else that can offer you anything useful except me."

"Even if your country gives you all, it couldn't save you."

Ye Xiao nodded/ "Like I said. You are a wise man. That is what I mean."

Master Bai didn't change his gesture, and his eyes showed a slight sense of disdain. He looked at the smoke rising in the air and said, "Why would I help you? I can't think of one reason that I should help you for! It truly is a question that even a wise man like me couldn't answer!"

Ye Xiao still acted casual. Then, a bland smile appeared on his face. "I am not asking you to do it as a favor. I am asking for a cooperation. If you disagree, we will have to deal with the recent situation ourselves. Well, we may not lose this one anyway."

...

Chapter 287: How Do You Motivate Me?

“If we give one of the sect some certain profits, we will definitely survive this. The other sect who fails to get the profits will be handled by the one who do. If that happens, the House of the Chaotic Storm will never be welcomed in the Ling-Bao Hall forever.”

Master Bai smiled in surprise. “Are you threatening me?”

Ye Xiao laughed. “Reality is cruel. Since we cannot get away from the battle against the two great sects, I don’t mind to add the House of the Chaotic Storm in the fray. As you said, Ling-Bao Hall would never defeat them. Then, if our enemy is stronger, how would that change anything for us?”

Master Bai smile turned soft. “That is true... You won’t feel itchier because of more louses, right? Perhaps... You are bound to lose as your enemy is the joint force of the two great sects, so even if the House of the Chaotic Storm join them, you’re still going to lose. So you don’t care?”

Wan-Er looked at Ye Xiao with a taunt in her eyes.

For her, it was a day full surprises!

She was surprised that there was actually someone who could get away from her master’s Soul Sight.

Now, she saw the man asking for protection from the House of the Chaotic Storm by threatening Master Bai... There hadn't been anybody who dared to threaten the House of the Chaotic Storm for thousands of years.

In her mind, Feng Zhiling was not only bold. What he was doing was something record-breaking.

“Master Bai, you are right.” Ye Xiao smiled. “Ling-Bao Hall will die if we don't give in and do something against the two great sects. If the House of the Chaotic Storm doesn't help us, so what if I offend you? That is the truth!”

He smiled. “Normally, we wouldn't do such a reckless thing. Even if we have such a thought, I won't say it in front of you. However, it is an important moment for us now. I have to do it quick and take the risk. I don't want to waste any time, yours or mine.”

Master Bai smiled again; his eyes were no more sharp and cold, and they became soft and warm like spring. He said, “To do things quick and take risks always lead to death! It is nothing but a reckless move. The only thing I agree is the last part. We don't waste anyone's time!”

Ye Xiao spoke blandly, “I am running out of time. I have to do it this way. To do it quick is the right choice.”

Master Bai was interested. He spoke with a light voice, “But even under such a dangerous situation, you still won't say anything

about your true identity. Is it even more important than the life and death of Ling-Bao Hall to you?”

Ye Xiao stayed silent for a while and then he said, “I do have difficulty on that.”

Master Bai was understanding. He nodded slowly and said, “So your secret is more important than Ling-Bao Hall. Hmm. In fact, you already have a backup plan for your own. Even if the Ling-Bao Hall collapsed, you can just casually become who you really are and live on casually and peacefully. Nobody will recognize you as the Feng Monarch.”

“In fact, for someone with your capability, it is an easy job to build another ‘Ling-Bao Hall’.”

“You are certainly a capable man. You always have something inside your mind. Ling-Bao Hall has certain official background, but you should be someone important to the Kingdom of Chen... Maybe you are a son of someone important?”

Ye Xiao blandly smile, yet he didn't reply.

The intelligence of Master Bai had terrified Ye Xiao.

He could easily figure out anything from only a simple fact. Nothing would be missed!

It was rather dangerous to talk recklessly. To say one more word

meant exposing himself more.

Master Bai tapped on the knee lightly. He lowered his head and stopped looking at Ye Xiao. He looked at his own hands and talked to Ye Xiao slowly, “You won’t tell me who you are, yet you want me to help you. You said you are asking for cooperation... Well, you must have something I want but I cannot get it myself.”

“That is why you are acting so confidently and casually like you know everything.”

“You know that I will eventually say yes to whatever you ask once you tell me what you can offer. That is the most valuable card in your hand, is that right?”

“You won’t tell me who you are, but you are keeping a backup plan for yourself. You dare to come to me... You are absolutely confident about it!”

Master Bai smiled and looked at Ye Xiao again.

Ye Xiao was smiling.

The legendary man, owner of the House of the Chaotic Storm, figured out everything as expected.

It truly saved everybody’s time when dealing with such a wise person.

Well, it was also dangerous at the same time.

Only a minor mistake would lead Ye Xiao to death, as Master Bai was so much stronger than him!

“That’s it.” Ye Xiao said, “To be honest, I would say I have fifty percent chance to get the deal I want with you.”

“Fifty... You said fifty. That means you are thinking more. It is worth a shot as you can see an over fifty percent chance...” Master Bai was interested. He looked at Ye Xiao and said, “I was thinking maybe I should end the conversation and kick you out. Now, I changed my mind. I am interested.”

“Where do you get such confidence?” Master Bai moved aside his head. The hair on his head moved a bit. Inside his profound eyes, something moved like the sea waves.

“What do you have that makes you believe it will motivate me?”

“You know who I am! You know there is nothing I cannot get on my own!”

Master Bai truly was curious.

He was not the only one though.

Wan-Er was also filled with confusion and curiosity.

[What does this Feng Zhiling have to motivate my master?

No matter what Master wants in the world, he will get it. There is nothing he wants but cannot get.

Nothing can be used to lure him!

Everybody in the House of the Chaotic Storm knows it!

However, this Feng Zhiling is so confident. He is trying to break our common acknowledgment. Where does he get such confidence?]

...

Chapter 288: Fortune And Fate

Ye Xiao said, “Since I am here, I should be confident. If not, why would I come?”

“It is useless now to talk too much. I am quite interested with whatever makes you so confident.” Master Bai’s eyes were filled with interest. He looked at Ye Xiao and said with a deep voice, “However, if it fails to surprise me, today should be the last day of your life. You have a fifty percent chance to surprise me, but I am one hundred percent sure I can take you down!”

He spoke slowly, “Under this sky, nobody can still live on after being so arrogant in front of me.”

“Actually, I hope you can be an exception.” Master Bai was calm; no a single emotion was shown on his face.

The phenomenon suddenly cooled down.

The smoke in the air turned into a mess; it didn’t look tidy and beautiful anymore.

Ye Xiao laughed and said, “You have the whole world. You wave your hand and the cloud and rain come for it. You can decide the future of a kingdom. Within thousands of years, you what you want again and again. It should be a game to you. If it is, that is so boring and there is no fun in it.”

Master Bai's face turned dark, but he didn't say anything.

“Now I can be sure... You, Master Bai, Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heaven are the people who controls the collapse during the thousands of years. You are who you were thousands of years ago. Things you are doing are the same as what you did thousands of years ago. I know nobody dares to mess with you already, but... you should be much stronger than you are now.”

Ye Xiao spoke slowly, “And you have done it so many times. The collapse... You must have been doing it for something special.”

“You shouldn't be enjoying the process of the collapse. All games will turn boring!”

“So, storms are not meant to be chaotic, and the martial world is not the world.”

Ye Xiao spoke and thought at the same time. He didn't talk fast; he was trying to make every word sound clearly.

Master Bai was sitting and listening quietly. He didn't interrupt.

If he interrupted, it might be the end of Ye Xiao's life!

The smoke flew around him again, covering his eyes and his face. It made him look like a shadow in nihility.

It felt like nothing about him was real.

It felt like if wind blew on him, he would disappear like the smoke.

They all knew Master Bai was listening to Ye Xiao carefully.

He wouldn't miss anything.

“Collapse of a kingdom, especially in its height of power and splendor, is to change the world and repeat the fate... It concerns too many things. It is not an easy thing...”

Ye Xiao sighed. “Maybe you have your difficulty about not being able to stop, however, it won't be an enjoyable thing.”

“After all, it takes lives. It works against the god's will. It produces disasters. Too many blood is splashed, and it produces too many undeserved death. That will absolutely cost you something. The fate of the whole world is not so easy to change, yet you changed it again and again.”

Ye Xiao raised his head as he looked at Master Bai and said, “I am not sure whether you care about what I said or not?”

Master Bai's face wasn't calm anymore. It turned darker and darker, yet he didn't speak at all. His sight froze. At this moment, he wasn't looking at Ye Xiao, but instead, he was looking at nothingness.

It was the first time that Master Bai got away from another's watch!

For so many years, he had never avoided eye contact from others. This time, Master Bai didn't want to get away too, but he thought of all those times he made the collapse in the thousands of years and all the death in it; he felt that even hell couldn't hold the countless people that died in his hands...

For the first time, he avoided people's daze.

His face was still calm, and his eyes were still stable, but deep inside, his heart had been shocked.

On the other side, Wan of the Clouds smiled blandly as she said, "You are wrong, Feng Monarch."

Ye Xiao said, "Oh? I would love to hear more."

Wan-Er blandly spoke, "From time immemorial, there have always been death and life, unity and separation. When one kingdom falls, another rises. All those kings have killed countless people for their own interests, and the world suffered wars because of them. What had those citizens done? They were innocent, yet they still couldn't complain, could they? All they could do was accept it. After all, when the power struggles settled, peace and happiness would return. That has always been the truth!"

“That is what happens all the time! It happens again and again!”

“It repeats and repeats, and it never stops. The kingdoms won’t die out, nor will war!”

“A mountain of dead bodies makes a great hero. How many do you think there should be to make a kingdom?”

Wan-Er spoke harsh words, “Since when did a normal citizen have the right to control his own fate? When the war begins, homes will be ruined, wives and children will vanish, who should they complain to? What place in this world can hold justice for them?”

Before Ye Xiao replied, Wan-Er harshly continued, “Feng Monarch, please, to say things like enforcing justice on heaven’s name and overthrowing tyranny... they are only excuses for people to fight for higher positions. They are nothing but noble excuses.”

“When those who claimed they would enforce justice and overthrow tyranny became kings, they became kings themselves!”

“They talked like they would last for thousands of years, yet after several generations, every one of them ended up tragic!”

“All their words... is nothing but an excuse! They aim at power! Interests! Profits! That is what drives them!”

Wan-Er’s voice was getting lower. Her words were still sharp like

knives though. “People is always a tool to the governors! They do whatever they want and get whatever they need!”

“The tragedy of the people never ends!”

“That is the reality of the world!”

“That is what happens on all people!”

“That is what a king does!”

“That happens in all the lands under the firmament!”

“It never changes!”

Wan-Er’s voice suddenly turned soft, “Feng Monarch, do you agree?”

Ye Xiao spoke in a deep voice, “You have profound thoughts, my lady. I agree. However, there are always reasons for a kingdom’s rise and fall, fortunate or not! Perhaps it is luck, the meritorious services, or the loyal people...”

“Heh, heh...” Wan-Er sneered, “Fortunate? What is it? Luck? Tell me, what is it?”

Ye Xiao helplessly smiled.

Even the Xiao Monarch couldn't have the answer. He knew a bit of it, but not all. In front of the people who really understood the power of fortune and fate, the ones who were truly able to use them, Ye Xiao felt that it was better to keep his mouth shut.

“All is about a game of snatching power and interest. That's it.” Wan-Er's voice was soft. Her face looked peaceful, however, the words from her mouth were extremely cold. She sounded like a goddess looking down upon the mortal world and the ants on it.

...

Chapter 289: Crippled Because of Divine Punishment

“We don’t deny that there is true love among people. We just don’t like games of powers at all.”

“Since ancient times, one mortal man after another played such a game to gain their great accomplishment. Why can’t we collapse them?”

“Since the world would never escape the tragic war, does the one who makes it happen matters?”

Wan-Er spoke coldly.

Ye Xiao threw his hands up and helplessly spoke, “Indeed, it doesn’t matter.”

Wan-Er continued, “Then why would you say all those useless words? Is it your big mouth that gives you the confidence?”

Ye Xiao said, “It is a good perspective. For the world and the people, there is no difference who makes the tragedy happen. However, for the ones who make it happen, there must be shame and guilt in their hearts!”

“There is love in the world; there is rule under the firmament!”

Ye Xiao spoke slowly, “Love in the world and rule under the firmament! The heaven has been watching the world since the beginning of time! He who obeys the rule lives, while he who violates it dies! People who violates the will of heavens and tries to use it for his own interest will definitely get the divine punishment!”

The divine punishment!

Wan-Er just humphed. She didn’t say anything.

Ye Xiao said, “I have read many history books about the Land of Han-Yang. Since the first kingdom was built and the first king became king, it has been ninety-nine thousand years now!”

“During such a long time, there has been hundreds of dynasties in the history of this land, and over ten thousand kingdoms collapsed!”

“All those kings, hundreds of years or even just dozens of years after they became kings, their clan would be wiped out. Their bloodlines would be broken! Not a single younger generation was left! There were no exceptions!”

“Whether he was great or not, every king dreamed about having his kingdom live forever. However, a few years later, their kingdoms would always fall into war.”

“The citizens suffered from the wars, but the citizens always

survived. There will always be younger generations of the normal clans. They are the truly long lived ones. Those kings who desperately wanted to have their kingdoms live forever will lose their clan after hundreds of years or even just dozens of years!”

“How ironic! Normal clans will survive, but the royal clans will always die out.”

“Don’t you see that the names that died in the history are always the names of those kings?”

Ye Xiao said with a deep voice, “That is the rule of the heavens. It is the divine punishment to those who break the peace and happiness of the world! That is the punishment! That is the reverse impact!”

“Lives of billions people are not something that can be easily wasted!”

“A man should work hard himself in cultivation to get his honorable position. As for the man who sacrificed his people’s lives to get on his own throne, if such a man didn’t suffer the divine reverse impact, there must be no justice in the world!”

“Lady Wan-Er, you just said that people have nowhere to complain, so they could only accept it and bear it, waiting for a peaceful new kingdom to come. I want to tell you, lady, that even though the people do not have a place to seek for justice, they don’t have to! The gods will hold justice for them. Good or bad, the gods will decide! The murderer will eventually get the divine

punishment sooner or later!”

Wan-Er wanted to speak something but didn't speak.

Things were recorded clearly in history books.

Even though some kings were so powerful that they could kill those who wrote the history books, they failed to cover the truth. Thus, it wasn't something that one person could simply deny!

Most importantly, Ye Xiao was right about it.

Those kings who used to rule the world had descendants that became tools to help some officials snatch a higher position. One after another, their lives became sacrifice to others' promotion!

Once a king was crowned, he would never think that not after long, the sons or grandsons he loved and placed great hopes on would be murdered, and their heads would even be hang on the wall to warn their people, or be hang on somebody's belt as evidence of their victory.

“A king losing his bloodline is perhaps the result of divine punishment. However, we, the House of the Chaotic Storm, have never thought about taking any throne. What we do is just to push it faster when a kingdom is falling so that the new one will rise sooner. Base on that, we are doing something greatly beneficial to the world! There were so many great wars ended so soon because of our efforts. There is always peace after war. The people will

have a peaceful and happy life for hundreds of years. The hundreds of years of peace is our merits and virtues!”

Wan-Er’s gaze turned sharp as she toughly spoke, “So, what you just said is wrong. It is just your own thoughts. It is unilateral! The heavenly principles never work on us.”

Ye Xiao casually spoke, “If so, why is our famous Master Bai crippled now?”

His eyes stared at Master Bai’s legs sharply.

His response was like a lightning piercing the dark clouds in the sky.

It was sharp and pungent!

It was unassailable!

Wan-Er didn’t know what to say. The way she looked became cold, and the look in her eyes seemed as if she would kill at any moment.

Ye Xiao just ignored her; he spoke slowly, “Like I said, I have read many books about the House of the Chaotic Storm. I know everything that is recorded about you... There is some records about the mysterious and dominant Master Bai of the House of the Chaotic Storm.”

“There are not many records, but in those books, these words showed up quite usually.”

Ye Xiao stopped for a while and continued, “The war suddenly happened in some dynasty. The battle covered thousands of miles, and a mysterious martial force took a great influence in the war. That was the House of the Chaotic Storm... The man named Master Bai from this house was like a powerful god, wise like the ocean. He gave orders thousands of miles away, yet he still held the battle under his control. The word was in his hand... But he was crippled...”

He was talking so slowly. When he said the part “he was crippled”, he spoke it even slower.

He was saying it one word after another as if the voice was from the slit between his teeth. Every word was like a thousands kilograms hammer hitting down from the sky.

It hit on the heart of whoever was listening to him.

Wan-Er's face turned pale. She bit her own lip. The way she looked at Ye Xiao became so sharp and full of killing intent. She didn't even try to cover it.

“There is one thing quite interesting about those records though—every description about Master Bai's disability was different,” Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

...

Chapter 290: The Ace in My Hand

“You three have created legendary feats one after another... Think about the years it took. You three must be in a very horrible age now. What a creepy truth!”

Ye Xiao grinned. He smiled to Wan-Er who had now started to show her anger.

“Ordinary people could never reach that age or that level of horror. I reckon you three must be some super cultivators! You must be super cultivators in some other world.”

“In fact, if the real power of you three burst out, this entire land may only be able to endure one of you!”

“So, you must be far beyond... what you show now.”

Ye Xiao spoke with a deep voice, “That is what I was talking about... No matter whether it is those kings... or the House of the Chaotic Storm, whoever have the mind of collapsing a dynasty and make the people live in war and death will get the divine punishment!”

“That is the divine reverse impact!”

“Such reverse, even Master Bai, who is an astonishing genius and a super cultivator, cannot escape.”

“All in all, I can boldly go to a conclusion... That is why Master Bai became crippled...” Ye Xiao looked up facing Master Bai. He looked right into his calm eyes and blandly spoke, “The cooperation I am proposing is mostly based on that. I wonder if Master Bai is moved or not?”

Master Bai was still calm.

His face was still expressionless.

He looked like he didn't care about what Ye Xiao was talking at all.

Wan-Er took in a long breath and impatiently said, “Say more. Make it clear. You haven't talked about our profits at all. What should we be moved for?”

Ye Xiao casually spoke, “I am making it clear. Whether it is a divine punishment or a cultivation side effect, although I may not be able to cure them completely, but I have certain methods to deal with them. Maybe I can help Master Bai and the two ladies solve your problem in advance.”

“That is the ace in my hand.”

Ye Xiao frankly spoke, “At the moment, Ling-Bao Hall is in great danger. The two sects are pushing too hard. If we bow to either one of them to save ourselves, we will lose the Ling-Bao Hall. The House of the Chaotic Storm is our last hope.”

“Unluckily, the kingdom the House of the Chaotic Storm is collapsing is the same as the kingdom where the Ling-Bao Hall is situated. We are bound to be enemies, and I don’t think we should conspire with each other. However, driven with desperation... and...”

Ye Xiao smiled. “Even if I didn’t do this, the thousands of years of experience has told us all that a crippled Master Bai is still able to collapse a kingdom...”

“The fifty percent chance I said is not about my sincerity or my bargaining chip. It is about whether you want to end such an embarrassing life earlier or not. If you do, we can have a deal. If not, I will walk away like nothing has happened. I can even just sit here and wait for death. You want it or not, that’s a fifty percent chance. Only one thought makes the call!”

Ye Xiao laughed. “All people will take risk during their lives. My presence here in Sky Room No. 1 may be the biggest risk I have taken in my life.”

Wan-Er turned to Master Bai and looked at him.

Questions clouded her eyes.

If she could, she would say yes to Ye Xiao without any hesitation.

When Master Bai first suffered the divine reverse impact a long

time ago, he had experience all sorts of disabilities like blindness, deafness, and anosmia. They had tried a lot of methods in order to cure him, yet none of them succeeded.

If someone told them that there was a way to cure the divine reverse impact, then Wan-Er would most likely disregard it. However, because it was Feng Zhiling who said so, it was a different story.

There was a simple reason. Feng Zhiling was the monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall, and he was the creator of those supreme dan beads.

Pei-Yuan Dan, Bone Ablutionary Dan, Limit Breaking Dan or other higher level dan were all useless for Master Bai. However, if they were supreme dan beads, they were different. Master Bai had used countless medicines for the divine reverse impact. He had even used the legendary Nine Rolls Golden Dan. None of them was in supreme dan level. In the level system of dan, the supreme dan level was the extreme level, and it was called the divine level.

To deal with the divine reverse impact, only things in divine level could help.

Surely, to use one supreme Pei-Yuan Dan bead wouldn't be able to completely cure an illness. It wasn't that simple. It should be specifically made for the certain disease, and it should also be a supreme dan bead. That was when it worked!

Wan-Er certainly understood the rule. That was why she was looking at her master like this. She wanted him to say yes!

However, she didn't dare to say it.

Things about him could only be decided by himself.

Master Bai was still calm.

The next moment, he opened his eyes.

He looked at Ye Xiao the third time.

It felt like there were two sharp arrows in his eyes pointing out.

At this moment, Ye Xiao felt like his face were stabbed by needles.

It was a pain that could burn his soul.

Master Bai didn't wait for Ye Xiao to respond. He lowered his head and looked at his own legs.

His legs were completely unresponsive. They were like two rotten woods.

Master Bai could clearly feel a huge mass of power hidden inside himself.

It was an enormous power... that allowed him to roll the world by reaching out a hand.

If he could get his true power back, he wouldn't need to move—he would just need to look at somebody, then no matter how powerful that man was in this world, he would be defeated!

With a single glance, he could make anyone in the world kneel for him.

On his left was Wan of the Clouds, while on his right was Xiu of the Heavens. When he waved his hand, the wind and cloud would move; when he stretched his hand, the whole world was under his control!

It was such a fierce saying when people heard this. However, he himself was the only one who truly knew what it was like “when he waved his hand and the wind and cloud moved” and “when he stretched his hand and the whole world was under his control”...

If he could have his true power back, it wasn't just a way of describing!

That saying would be real!

Actually, he could do more than that!

He could take away everything in the world by only waving his sleeve. He could do whatever he wanted as he wished!

[God?]

Master Bai would only sneer.

[What is god?

Me! I am god!

‘All lands in the world belongs to the king, while all living things are the king’s servants... It is an old saying, but it is a joke. It was a complete joke! That’s it.

But now I can only sit here quietly.

The world-shocking, astonishing and extreme power, I can use none of it!]

...

Chapter 291: Where the Heart Was Settled; Where the Friendship Ties!

Master Bai sighed. His eyes seemed faint, as if a river of stars were all shining inside them.

Ye Xiao nodded.

Master Bai kept his head low, but Ye Xiao knew he could see!

Master Bai suddenly looked up and smiled blandly. “You are a smart man. You really are. You are good at inference. You have actually seen things that others couldn’t see.”

He seemed staring at Ye Xiao, but his eyes were faint; his eyes seemed to be an abyss. “The first time, I lost all my cultivation capability. The second time, I lost all my capability, and my hands couldn’t move. The third time, I lost all my capability and my Jing and Mai all broke up. The fourth, I lost my capability, my Jing and Mai, and I was blind...”

“... The seventh... This time, it was the ninth. I have lost all my capability, my eyes, my legs, my Jing and Mai, and my spiritual mind!”

“Such disability must be... the divine reverse impact! It was for my sin of killing billions of lives!”

“It has nothing to do with disease or illness.”

Master Bai took in a deep breath and ironically spoke, “You can cure it? Even though you have those supreme dan, even though they are called divine level dan beads, all you have are ordinary dan. Will they really work?”

Ye Xiao smiled blandly. “In this world, every organization, force, or individual fears you. Nobody dares to go against you. At the same time, people who want to kill you are everywhere. Everybody wants to kill you and become a new legend themselves. Nobody is able to though. However... I don’t think there are many people who dare to lie in your face by telling you something absolutely impossible... Right?”

Master Bai smiled blandly. Between his eyes, an absolute pride congealed!

It was his pride that showed indifference to everything in the world.

It was the pride at the bottom of his heart and deep inside his bones!

He tapped on his knees with his white and clean hands. He smiled and said, “Not many, indeed. In fact, none. However, maybe I am looking at one now.”

Ye Xiao laughed. “Or maybe you are just looking at an

opportunity.”

Master Bai looked at him with interest. “Oh?”

“In fact, in my mind, I absolutely don’t like to, and I shouldn’t... offer you such convenience.” Ye Xiao was being frank.

“Because I am trying to collapse the Kingdom of Chen?”

“That’s right.”

Master Bai’s eyes became profound. “It turns out you are so closely bonded... to this kingdom. Maybe... is it a restraint?”

Ye Xiao lightly breathed and nodded, then he replied, “Yes!”

Master Bai’s eyes became dimmer.

He felt like he was in the mist again, and he couldn’t see things anymore.

He surprisedly realized that he was wrong.

He thought that Feng Monarch must have been from an upper realm.

He should be at least from the Qing-Yun Realm. Such a person

was impossible to have feelings for this Land of Han-Yang, or the kingdom he was living in.

Cultivators in the Qing-Yun Realm were mostly tough, arrogant, and selfish.

They would rather betray everybody than be betrayed by others!

However, the man standing in front of him now was obviously bonded to his country. Furthermore, he was restrained in it.

Master Bai had that conclusion in mind; he just didn't say it. At last, he just dispelled the idea.

[Feng Zhiling seems to be a native in the Land of Han-Yang. He is actually a loyal citizen of the Kingdom of Chen!

Otherwise, he wouldn't react like that.

A man like that, with such a bond, makes it much easier for me. I can use it for many profits. Although I don't really feel like doing so, it gives me another way to get him down.

I am like holding his soft spot. Under the present situation, if I can have a man like him to use, it will surely bring me much convenience. It will make my plan go smoother. Since so, the cooperation he proposed isn't a bad thing. I will have the initiative in the relation anyway. I can always turn it around. I control everything, and I am the one who control the real power.

However, a man who has lived in the Qing-Yun Realm and was born in the Land of Han-Yang... I don't think I have ever heard about such a figure.]

“Country is just a powerful organization in the world... The emotional bond that was spoken is nothing but a method of the kings to control his people...” Master Bai spoke blandly, “Feng Monarch is an experienced man. How come you have such ignorant thoughts. It really doesn't suit the image Feng Monarch has in my mind.”

When he said so, his eyes were shining.

His voice was heavy, and there was no confusion at all.

He was actually testing him.

He was testing the man in front of him, trying to figure out if he was lying.

Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, “Maybe it's just a method, but... loyalty and devotion are the basic rules of human being. It is something always right. We live in this world, and we shall believe in something. That is our belief. That is something a man can fight for.”

Master Bai frowned and said, “Oh?”

When he frowned, his eyebrows were like two dragons lying on the mountains and in the valley.

When he stretched them after frowning, they were like two cyan dragons flying beyond the cloud in the sky.

Ye Xiao noticed that, and he was shocked.

He had never seen anybody who could make such changes by frowning and stretching his eyebrows. It wasn't something that could be acquired; it was an inborn ability.

It was his gift.

Ye Xiao thought for a moment before slowly saying, "As a person, and as a man, one should have something he truly cares about; something he would love to protect... He needs something he truly believes. Something like... the sense of shame, the spirit of loyalty, the soul of sincerity... No matter what or why he does, as long as he feels a clear conscience about the result, whatever happens doesn't really matter."

"The country I was born in is my belief. I cannot leave it or abandon it."

When Ye Xiao said so, he felt relaxed in his heart.

There was a breath of foul qi being suppressed in his chest since he entered this room, but now, he had completely breathed it out!

There was no sign of it, and he suddenly felt extremely relaxed!

Chapter 292: Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan

At this moment, Ye Xiao clearly felt that his mind was subliming in a huge extent!

Under the huge suppression of Master Bai, Ye Xiao had been in an extremely lower position since he came in, and he felt ill about it.

He was so suppressed, and he couldn't vent it. That was rather uncomfortable!

If he forcibly kept holding it inside his heart, it would eventually wound him. It would cause a hidden wound in him which was difficult to cure!

But at this moment, he had spoken out the words from deep inside his heart; the place where he had been still insisting, and where he kept his feelings.

Actually, after it burst after being so suppressed, his state of mind broke through a new level.

Master Bai stretched his eyebrows in surprise. It was like two cyan dragons flying up. He looked at Ye Xiao while seemingly lost in thoughts.

In fact, in his eyes, there was a slight sense of disappointment.

[As expected...

This man is the Loyal Bayard that exists in legends.

I thought he was someone else, but that man could never have such a state of mind.

He cannot be that guy.

Since he isn't that guy...

He surely doesn't have that thing I have been looking for so long.

In other words... I am disappointed again.]

Master Bai lowered his head. He seemed taunting, yet with respect in his voice, he lightly said, "Although I disagree with you and I am disdainful to your point, but I understand your choice and your insistence."

Ye Xiao thought about what he heard in his mind; it seemed dissociable. He slowly answered, "I understand. Thank you."

Master Bai blandly smiled and said, "Now, let's talk about your problem. I don't want to hear anything about your 'country', 'home' and all. I want to know what makes you so confident that you can make me believe you."

Ye Xiao smiled. “Both you and Lady Wan-Er are marvelous in cultivation and have profound views. You may be the most experienced people in the world. If what I depend on is only the supreme dan, it must certainly be a joke. Dan beads in supreme level is indeed called divine dan beads, yet it is just so called. It may not be useful for you on your illness!”

Master Bai smiled. “Good. You passed level one. If you told me you are confident because of those supreme dan beads, I would have to send you away!”

That was quite a mysterious saying. It could be “send you away the room”, or “send you away from the world”!

Ye Xiao smiled. “I am flattered. Your illness is the divine punishment from gods. For that reason, all the medicines in this world wouldn’t work. All the healing arts in the world wouldn’t work either. Well, I wonder if you have ever heard about the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan?”

Master Bai’s eyes lit up, and he said word by word, “Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan?”

“That’s right. Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan.” Ye Xiao slowly nodded.

Master Bai took a breath out and said, “Now I am starting to believe.”

Wan-Er was also excited; her face turned red a bit.

[He is actually talking about the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!]

Master Bai and Wan-Er looked at each other, as if both of them had realized something.

In fact, they should have known it long earlier.

Since a man could make so many kinds of supreme dan, he might also be able to make the legendary supreme dan—the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!

It was such a reasonable thing.

However, trivial things have overshadowed the important ones.

They actually ignored such a possibility...

It wasn't Master Bai's fault though. Such a supreme dan hadn't shown up for tens of thousands years in all realms.

It only existed in the myth; it only existed in the fairy tales!

“In fact, Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is only as marvelous as it sounds. It has only normal efficacy.” Ye Xiao smiled and

continued, “Long time ago, there was a great capable man. He killed a lot, and his only son suffered atrophy in his Jing and Mai, and his child couldn’t cultivate any martial arts. He would never live over eighteen.”

Master Bai was smiling.

He knew the story Ye Xiao was telling them.

He knew it, yet he didn’t stop Ye Xiao.

“This great man was truly a capable figure. He sensed the divine will and made a divination about his son. He got to know his son’s illness was because of his killings. So many people died in his hands or died because of him... The reason why his son would suffer such a pain was that... he killed too many people. The gods were punishing him.”

“That is... the divine punishment!”

Master Bai said, “That’s right. That guy was born with that illness. In the views of ordinary people, it must be some incurable disease; but for us, it is actually the punishment from the heavens.”

“Man will eventually get what he deserves in his life; it is unavoidable. Maybe he could get away from it because of some reason for sometime, however, his following generations will take the divine punishment.”

Ye Xiao nodded. “That is right.”

Master Bai continued, “As he knew the reason, this great man realized there is nothing he could do to cure his son. In fact, before he made the divination, he had already tried countless methods, and none of which worked. For that reason, he decided to make that divination; the most unauthentic method. He became so upset that he stopped killing anymore after he knew there was no cure for his son. He focused all his efforts in seeking medical treatments. He went to many realms and he cured countless illnesses and saved countless of people. Perhaps the gods were moved by it. When he was helping a hopeless patient in some realm, he tried to make some dan bead using a special method that he hoped could bring about any bliss from the depths of misfortune. He made it and, at the same time, he found a way to cure his son.”

“The great man was enlightened. He didn’t need to collect all the medical materials in all realms to cure his son. In fact... he only had to deal with it from the original aspect. He had to make a special dan that could work against the heaven’s will. It should work from deep inside the Jing and Mai. Gradually, it dispersed the wound from the divine reverse impact.”

“Materials for that dan weren’t hard to find. In fact, there was only one problem with it... It must be at the supreme level, and it had to be top quality.”

“If it wasn’t at the supreme level, it wasn’t Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. That would just be wasting time and materials.”

“In fact, the reason why the supreme dan can be called the Divine Dan Beads is because it will have the qi of recreation, which dan beads in other level wouldn’t have. Only supreme dan beads at supreme level could produce the qi of recreation on its own. That was working against the rule of heavens. Only that could gradually cure the disease from the heavens... Such dan beads cure the disease from the radical aspect. That was fighting against the gods. That is why it is called... Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan! In fact, it doesn’t have other levels. It only has one level; that is the supreme level!”

...

Chapter 293: You Have Your Insistence; I Have My Responsibility!

Ye Xiao looked at Master Bai and said word by word, “As for your current condition, you didn’t have it when you were born, yet it is still the divine punishment. It is the reverse impact from your own qi and blood. It is a certain outcome of what you have done against the heaven’s will. You are a powerful cultivator indeed, yet you are still not in the highest league. You cannot resist the power from the heavens.”

“Though your power still protects you for sure. You actually survived from all those reverse impacts. The divine punishment has actually just made you unhealthy... That is all. Your problem can still be solved by the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan.”

“As long as you wait for the dan beads to be finished, all your illness will be removed.”

“At least... it surely won’t be a problem for you to walk again.”

Ye Xiao smiled. “That is what supports me to come here today. If I don’t have this, how could I dare to show up in such a dangerous place like this. With my current cultivation capability, how would I come to this Sky No. 1 Room where the great House of the Chaotic Storm stays?”

Master Bai blandly smiled. “However, even though you are confident about it and you think you have such a bargaining chip in hand, if I say no, you are still nothing. I am the one who holds

the decision.”

“Sure. I just want to cooperate with you, nothing more.” Ye Xiao casually smiled, “Anyways, facing such a helpless situation, this is the biggest effort I can make already.”

“If Master Bai agrees to the cooperation, it would be a delightful thing for both sides. If you don’t, I will embrace the worst consequence that we have discussed earlier. It makes no difference no matter how I leave here.”

Master’s eyes turned sharp as he blandly said, “How can there be no difference? You have another personal identity, and it won’t be a problem for you to stay alive. You only need to just abandon something you have right now. That is all. Your ace card is always the supermen dan, not the Ling-Bao Hall.”

Ye Xiao casually smiled. “If I want to do that, I wouldn’t be here today.”

“No matter what my other identity is, I am still the monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall. If I don’t even try to save my men, how can I escape the guilt that deeply stuck in my heart even though I will live on? With such a feeling hidden inside my heart, the rest of my life will only be meaningless.”

He loudly laughed. “Master Bai, you are a leader yourself. You must understand what I mean.”

Master Bai's eyes showed a sense of bliss as he nodded. "I surely do. I didn't expect that you are such an ambitious man."

Ye Xiao smiled. "It is just something in my mind that I insist. That is a tough thought that stays in my mind. If, Master Bai... If someday you are in danger, but you can save yourself by sacrificing Lady Wan-Er, what would you choose?"

The girl in white clothes, Wan-Er, raised her head and looked at Master Bai in silence.

In her eyes were trust and softness.

"No matter what choice Master would make, I will take it as a blessing."

Master Bai showed a smile that was like spring. He smiled and said, "Reluctance!"

It was just a word that was casually spoken out, yet it was so meaningful.

He didn't want to answer it.

If he answered it, it meant that they were getting very close to the agreement of cooperation.

It meant he lost a point in the competition against Feng

Monarch.

That was making a choice that Feng Monarch wanted him to make.

Master Bai didn't want to do that.

However, facing the soft and trusting eyes of Wan-Er, he only felt warmth. He knew that even if he didn't answer it, Wan-Er wouldn't blame him and would still be trust him to the fullest.

Because he knew it too clearly, he chose to give the answer.

"A kingdom, a world, so what. What on earth could ever possibly be more valuable than my Wan-Er?"

Master Bai smiled and looked at Ye Xiao.

"That is what I wanted to say," Ye Xiao said. "You have your insistence, and I have my responsibility. That is all."

Master Bai smiled.

It was a smile that drew the agreement of the cooperation of both sides!

Wan-Er heard that her master was going to accept that

agreement, so she stopped being worried. She looked so happy and delighted as she said in a low voice, “I wonder what happened to the son of that great man at last. Was he cured?”

Master Bai smiled softly and said, “Of course he was. However, it wasted so many materials. If that great man didn’t have endless support, it would be impossible to make those dan beads... As for that young master, he has become one of the most powerful man in his generation. His achievements were no less than his father...”

Wan-Er heard so. Her eyes became brighter.

[If a divine punishment on a person who was even weaker than normal people could be cured, doesn’t it mean that the disease on Master Bai should be much easier to cure?

That means, maybe after not long, master will recover to his perfect condition?!

“However... As far as I am concerned, it is not the material that makes it difficult. It is... the way it is produced.” Master Bai said, “Only those at the supreme level can be called the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. If not, it would become a useless dan.”

“The Heaven Seizing Dan must be real. However, there has only been one man who has successfully made those dan beads. That was the great man in that story. Am I right?” Master Bai sounded like he was sighing.

Wan-Er's eyes suddenly turned dim, yet it became bright right away. It seemed she had big confidence on Feng Zhiling.

In fact, she was just so looking forward to the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. She wanted it to be made right away; she didn't want to lose hope!

Every time when she saw the crippled body of her master, she felt upset.

Such a capable man, one who could vanish the stars by waving his hand and shake the mountains by moving his arm, was now trapped on a small wheelchair. He was helpless, and he couldn't even move freely like ordinary people.

The helplessness of a hero, and the hopelessness of a warrior truly made her feel uncomfortable.

Master Bai got used to it already; he never thought much about it. However, as for the people around him, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er, who had been with him for all the years, they felt sad about it every time.

Now there was hope for that.

[But the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan...

Were the words Feng Zhiling said true?

It must be true!]

...

Chapter 294: Cooperation!

Master Bai looked at Ye Xiao. “Since you know so much about the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, I reckon you know who that great man is.”

Ye Xiao nodded. “Sure. I clearly know everything about this story. I know the background of that great man. What happened during his time was a great event of the history which all dan-makers should learn about. It is a great event that no other things could be compared to!”

“It took him three years coupled with the efforts of ninety thousand dan-makers from many realms and all the materials he could collect in the universe. He had been through so many failures, but eventually, one of the great dan-makers successfully made some Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads!”

“It solved his biggest problem, and his son finally got rid of the divine punishment. However, after that, no Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan had been produced ever. Even the great dan-maker who had succeeded one time never made it again. He had tried so many times though. The moment when he died, he was still upset about it. He thought it was just his good luck to succeed that one time.”

Master Bai blandly said, “It is true that you can produce supreme dan beads. That is something that cannot be denied. You are astonishingly capable in dan-making, and you may even be a genius in dan-making in all of history. However, the dan beads you showed us for now are all some low-class dan beads, even though

they are all at supreme level. They can only be used on cultivation. If we used them on other purposes, they will have little efficacy. The Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan only has one level, the supreme level. It is the true divine dan bead, and it should be in a much higher league than the Nine Roll Golden Dan. In other words, it is too different from those dan beads you have made so far. I am interested. Why are you so confident that you can successfully make this dan and help me with my unaccomplished great plan?"

Ye Xiao was frank. "You're right. There are several difficulties on making such dan beads. First difficulty is to make it in supreme level. It is also the basic requirement anyway. I have explained the reason earlier, so I won't repeat it. The second difficulty is the material it needs. It doesn't require any extremely rare materials, but it requires eighty-one pairs of materials."

"162 Materials, in 81 sorts. Two materials in one sort are against each other. All sorts are against each other too. They are all materials with opposite efficacies... There are countless contradictions in it. After my study, I discovered that the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is exactly the impossible balance among all those contradictions. To find out the balance is the only way to make it. Any slight mistake will fail the whole process."

"It is not only about the balance of all different kinds of efficacies, but also the way the dan beads are produced, and the mind of the man who is producing it. It requires the balance in all aspects... It is even more difficult than flying up to the heaven."

"So, like you said, it is so much more difficult than making ordinary dan beads."

Ye Xiao proudly smiled. “However, the key of making the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is to reach the supreme level. No matter how difficult the producing process is, it is a problem that can eventually be solved; only the supreme level that it requires is a tough task. In the history, there are only a small amount of supreme dan beads.”

What he meant was: Only I can do it!

Master Bai nodded. “You are reaching the point. In the recent thousands of years, there hasn’t been any supreme dan beads in the whole universe. Unexpectedly, in such a low-class realm, so many supreme dan beads have suddenly appeared. Thus, if there is anyone who can make the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, it must be you and you only.”

Wan-Er was delighted; since her master praised Feng Zhiling, it meant Feng Zhiling had at least fifty percent chance to successfully make the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, “Well then, I think you just showed a yes to our cooperation this time.”

Master Bai smiled blandly and said, “That’s right. I accept your ace card in hand. However, how long do you think you need to produce the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan? That is another topic I want to talk about, and it is an important one.”

“It is not a simple question to answer, yet it is not that difficult

either,” Ye Xiao said. “I will need no longer than one year to make some dan beads. If I have enough material, it may only cost me eight or nine months.”

“Materials are never a problem,” Wan-Er responded quickly. “You can make a list of all the materials you need as quickly as you can; I will gather them all in three days!”

“I have no doubt on your capability, Lady Wan-Er. The problem is... I should need more materials than the amount of one Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead.” Ye Xiao bitterly smiled. “I have confidence that I can make it, but I don’t think I can make it supreme level in just one shot. A Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead that is not at supreme level is just a useless dan bead. It means nothing to Master Bai. In fact, if I say that I can succeed by one try, you won’t believe me, will you?”

Wan-Er was apparently in a good mood. She actually laughed and said, “Of course not. If you don’t have all these supreme dan beads, I won’t even give you the opportunity to try it. If the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is truly that easy to make, how can it become a myth. I surely understand it. Materials are not a problem. You can keep on trying. All I want to see is just the result!”

“Not only a result, I want to see the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan in one year...” Master Bai said with a pair of calm eyes. “No, you have only ten months. I will recover myself from such a long time... Your dan beads will be no use to me.”

“As Lady Wan-Er said, the wise one will surely understand it.” Ye Xiao nodded, “I will try my best. If I cannot make it, the House of

the Chaotic Storm can do whatever you want to us. One year is just a short time. It won't change the gap between the powers of you and us!"

Master Bai nodded as a sign of agreement.

In fact, Master Bai didn't like this cooperation, or deal.

It was his first time in his life to make a cooperation with somebody else.

It was a special feeling of being pushed or lured.

This feeling made him feel uncomfortable.

He had seen the hope, the happiness, and the excitement from Wan-Er. He didn't want to turn it down and hurt her feelings.

[Since I have been here in this world, my temperament has been changed a lot." Master Bai looked at the happy face of Wan-Er; he felt his heart becoming soft.

...

Chapter 295: Disburdened!

“But this cooperation between us, is only about... me supporting Ling-Bao Hall on the crisis of facing the two great sects. That is all,” Master Bai blandly said. “Other things will not be included. When you get through all this, I should have paid enough.”

Ye Xiao decisively said, “Sure. That is what I ask. I am not as evil as that to threaten others by things they need. We all have our own purposes. In this world, you want to make the chaotic storm and collapse the kingdoms, while I want the world to be in peace and people live in a peaceful time. If we have to be against each other, let’s just do our best.”

Master Bai blandly smiled; he didn’t talk anymore.

“When that day comes, you and me will fight in the battle. We all fight for our own beliefs. Life or death, it is the gods decision to make.” Ye Xiao looked at Master Bai and spoke word by word, “In fact, in this world, there is no hatred. There are only different purposes and different positions! That is all.”

Master Bai thought about these words for a long time. After a while, he finally spoke again, “Good!”

...

When Ye Xiao vigorously walked out from the Sky No. 1 Room, the entire crowd focused on him.

As of this moment, Feng Monarch was full of joy; he was even smiling. The nonchalant appearance he had seemed like nothing happened. He acted like he had just visited one of his friends, drank some tea, and talked something ordinary.

He just casually walked out. As simple as that.

No one saw anything strange on him.

That was the strangest thing though!

The room of the House of the Chaotic Storm was no easy place to casually get in and get out.

People were all trying to figure out what Feng Monarch had talked to Wan of the Clouds in the room. He had been in there for such a long time, yet everything was quiet. Nothing actually happened.

People only knew that Wan of the Clouds was inside that room, and she was the only big figure. It was more than big enough though. They didn't know that the real owner of the House of the Chaotic Storm, Master Bai—the man who controls the fater of the world— was also in there!

Only Ye Xiao knew what it meant to get in and get out from that room.

He had handled too much suppression from it!

Every second during the talk was risking his life, although it seemed to be a peaceful conversation!

It looked like a casual and peaceful meeting, and both sides seemed to be very happy. However, Ye Xiao knew that this was the most dangerous moment of both his lives; it was such a frightening moment. Although he had already left, yet he could still feel the fear!

In that room, Ye Xiao surprisedly discovered something during that conversation—something far beyond his imagination.

He discovered that even when he was in his perfect condition as the Xiao Monarch, he still couldn't withstand a single blow from Master Bai!

Master Bai, the man who sat on the wheelchair...

The man who couldn't even kill a chicken!

He was a man who looked so gentle and decent, so handsome that almost all men would see him as an enemy and all women would see him as a dream lover...

He was actually so frightful as an enemy!

However, Ye Xiao felt a bit excited after tasting the fear!

He felt lucky to have such a powerful opponent!

Otherwise, he would have to live a boring life.

With such a high-class and powerful opponent, he surely would have a colorful and dramatic experience in the Land of Han-Yang in the days to come!

Ye Xiao walked down the stairs with a calm smile on his face.

When Wan Zhenghao gave him an inquiring look, he gave Wan Zhenghao a “relaxed” gaze.

“Oh my freaking gosh...” Wan Zhenghao’s fat body finally sat on the chair. The steel-like wooden chair that was made by the firmest wood in the world couldn’t hold the sudden strike from his weight as it nearly broke apart. Luckily, it made it. However, if Wan Zhenghao did it again, the chair would certainly break. After a second, the pressure from Wan Zhenghao was decreased. Wan Zhenghao knew that everything was settled, and they would be fine; he was eventually at ease. He relaxed himself, so that the pressure from him was decreased. The chair was lucky not to become a broken one.

On the other side, Liu Changjun’s eyes lit up when he saw Ye Xiao casually walking by.

[There it is.

So it is.

No matter how dangerous it is, he will solve the problem so casually. It takes him only minutes. All dangers are gone after his casualness.

He doesn't need to tell anybody about what has happened at all. He doesn't need to tell people what he has suffered. He just comfort his men, 'it is solved'!

I am so lucky to follow such a leader!

If only one day I can become so...]

Liu Changjun just stood there in silence like a spear!

The respect in his eyes were obvious.

He knew how big the pressure was to face the House of the Chaotic Storm!

Feng Monarch had been through it, done it, held it, and returned successfully!

He was the only one who was able to do it ever!

It was this man in Liu Changjun's sight!

Ye Xiao casually passed by Lan Langlang and Zuo Wuji.

A crown prince and three princes were also there. What a coincidence.

In people's eyes, what Feng Zhiling was doing was quite impenetrable!

Among all the people there, even the princes of the Kingdom of Chen were only in the lowest positions. They were less important than most of others in this event!

Looking at the monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall casually passing by, people didn't know whom this world shocking man was really walking to. The princes felt panic for no reason. They were so flurried.

Ye Xiao walked over directly to Lan Langlang.

It had been a while; his old friend had become a bit like a tough man now. The crossed eyes of his seemed a little bit better now.

Lan Langlang was full of confusion when he saw Ye Xiao coming over.

He didn't understand why this Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall would come to him so suddenly. He didn't know this man, and they never had any interactions before.

...

Chapter 296: Dan Beads For You

“Feng Monarch, may I ask what you come here for?” Lan Langlang was extremely cautious when he talked; he recently acquired this habit. He was indeed one of the “three lords in town”.

“Hmm. I am here to ask for your small help, Lord Lan,” Ye Xiao blandly said, “There is something I need you to hand over to General Lan.”

Lan Langlang said, “Hmm? May I ask what it is?”

Ye Xiao turned over his hand and there were three jade bottles in his hand.

Each bottle was filled with dan beads that were the same size as soya beans.

People all stared at the three bottles of dan beads. They couldn't move away anymore, and their breaths became heavier.

[How could it be something unimportant if it is a gift from the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall?]

[I wonder if it is the supreme dan?]

They thought for a while and then took such an idea as nonsense.

The dan beads in each bottle should be over 100. If they were all supreme dan beads, that would be enough to buy the entire Land of Han-Yang!

“This is some small things that I recently made... Gold Healing Dan.” Ye Xiao looked at Lan Langlang and said, “There are 200 dan beads in each bottle. When it is needed, take one dan bead and put it into warm water. When it melts, it should be enough for three people to heal their wounds... In three days, all wounds would be cured.”

Lan Langlang quickly stood up. His eyes were wide opened as he heavily breathed. “Are you serious?”

The eyes of those who heard Ye Xiao lit up. Their faces turned red all of the sudden!

[Such marvelous dan! Such a big amount!]

[One dan bead for three men. Two hundred dan beads per bottle. There are three bottles!]

[That means it is enough for two thousand injured men!]

The Gold Healing Dan was specially made for people who suffered injury. It was a blessing dan for soldiers!

With these three bottles of dan beads, many soldiers who couldn't recover would be cured in three days!

It would bring them lives!

They could even continue fighting!

That was some great present!

Many people and forces chased after Supreme Dan. They saw it as the most precious treasure. However, for soldiers, the Gold Healing Dan was much more useful than any other Supreme Dan.

The three bottles represented the lives of their brothers!

Lan Langlang's hands started shaking. He tightly held the bottles in hand like he was holding his own life. He couldn't even talk clearly as kept on saying, "Thank you! Thank you..."

Ye Xiao smiled and tapped on his shoulder.

If he gave Lan Langlang these dan beads as his friend, Ye Xiao, Lan Langlang would surely owe him a big one. Ye Xiao didn't want that; he saw Lan Langlang as his brother.

A favor was always difficult to return!

But since it was now a present from the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall, that was different.

This Feng Monarch was giving it out as a donation. It wasn't a gift from a friend to another.

Those two had different meanings.

"I only had time to make this many." Ye Xiao smiled. "I have run out of materials anyway. Let's give these to General Lan's southern troop for now. As for the others... Let me think about it later. Please forgive me."

[What the hell! What is he saying? He has given out such great things, and he's actually asking for forgiveness? What is he talking about?]

[Wait. What did Feng Zhiling say? No, not the 'forgive me' one. It is the one before it. 'As for the others... Let me think about it later'!]

[He is going to give more after this?]

Everybody heard Ye Xiao. People in the powerful forces, powerful sects, and those who were hidden cultivators realized something. They barely contacted with the war issues among kingdoms in the world. Those who control some certain areas had heard many hidden meanings from Ye Xiao's words.

The Feng Monarch, Feng Zhiling and his Ling-Bao Hall, was showing kindness to the Kingdom of Chen, at least to General Lan.

They might have some certain connection, and if not, how would he do such a thing for them and do it in front of the public. It was telling the whole world that whoever dared to fight against General Lan meant fighting against the Ling-Bao Hall!

That was a hidden threat. Before Feng Zhiling got in and out the room of the House of the Chaotic Storm, such a threat might only be useful for some people, but it meant nothing to most of the people there. However, now it was different! Most of them were thinking perhaps they should show good will to General Lan and do it as giving Ling-Bao Hall and its Monarch a favor!

Lan Langlang was so touched that he couldn't say anything at all.

Lan Langlang had been spirited up after Ye Xiao recently gave him those dan beads. He had been working so hard to study cultivation and do more physical exercise. He even started his own business to fight in the market.

Nobody expected that he could be good at doing business. It took him only a short time to start making big profits. In fact, that was why he was so confident during the auction this time. [I am rich now! I earned it myself. I will spend it how I wish. It won't be a problem to spend it all!]

Lord Lan was quite happy about it. However, his pride was smashed into pieces when the three bottles of Gold Healing Dan beads showed up!

He thought he had earned so much money, yet it was not enough

to buy even half a bottle of those Gold Healing Dan.

Feng Monarch could just give it away without any hesitation, and it was only a beginning; he would certainly give more in the future.

The three princes' eyes were emitting [green lights](#). They rushed over to try and talk with this Feng Monarch.

Since Feng Monarch was friendly to General Lan, it meant he was also friendly to the Kingdom of Chen. As princes of the Kingdom of Chen, they thought Feng Monarch should also be friendly to them!

Ye Xiao was acting politely. He talked to them with a few words, yet inside his heart, he was sneering.

“May I ask... Feng Monarch. Are these all that you you can offer? Or will there be more...” All of a sudden, a child's voice sounded out. It sounded polite, yet there was dissatisfaction in it.

Hearing the voice, Ye Xiao looked over to him. He saw a little guy who was about eight or nine. He was such a cute and adorable boy. The boy was staring at Ye Xiao with his round black eyes.

“Hmm. These are all. I don't have any more for now. Who are you, kid?” Ye Xiao asked.

“I am Chen Zhi.” The boy raised up his head and said, “These dan beads will save a lot soldiers in the south, but there are so many soldiers in the east, west and north. They are also fighting so hard.

Why not prepare some for them too?”

This question had shocked everyone around!

..

Green lights from their eyes mean they were greedy.

Chapter 297: The Prince, Chen Zhi

[What the hell! What is that question about? What is he talking about? It is already such a great favor to donate the dan beads. That is not his responsibility. He has given out such a lot, so how come you actually questioned him about it!]

[Honestly, it is such a reckless question!]

Ye Xiao was shocked and surprised.

The three princes were surely powerful competitors in the fight for the crown. They actually had no connections to Feng Zhiling at all. The three of them just saw Feng Zhiling offer such a great donation, so they thought Feng Zhiling was a very close friend to the Kingdom of Chen, and he would surely be very friendly to the future king of the kingdom. That was why they were so eager to ingratiate themselves with him. They didn't care about how the war was going, and they didn't care if their men in the other three battles would have their dan beads or not.

The youngest prince, who was impossible to win the crown, asked such a question all of a sudden.

The boy's whole life was decided by the king when he was born!

It wasn't a good question and it was unreasonable to ask, but he cared about it!

“It takes time to make the dan beads and it needs many materials. I don’t have it for now...” Ye Xiao was enlightened, so he said as a test, “But you can talk to Lord Lan and see if he can give some of them to the soldiers in other battles. I already gave him the dan beads, so he owns them. No matter what he will do with them, I will not be against it!”

Chen Zhi heard that and plumped his cheeks, and then he shook his head. “Forget it. Soldiers will be saved in the south with these dan beads. It may change the result of the battle. If we give some of them to other sides, the south will have far less dan beads to use. That would make no efficacy. For the same reason, the other three sides will also lack it.”

Ye Xiao was surprised about this boy’s thoughts. He said, “Does the southern side really need so many dan beads?”

Chen Zhi was shocked; his eyes rolled as he said, “Hmm. It may not need all these dan beads for now!” And then he was enlightened. He loudly spoke, “So it is... I see.”

Ye Xiao was praising this boy in the heart, and he asked on purpose, “What do you see? Why are you talking so oddly?”

The other princes, Lan Langlang, and Zuo Wuji all looked over. They didn’t understand why the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall would be so interested in this little prince, who was not even over ten years old. It was apparently an unreasonable question, yet the Monarch still answered.

Chen Zhi was a prince, but he was the least valued one. If the Crown Prince, or the King of the Kingdom of Chen himself was here, Monarch Feng wouldn't certainly show such kindness!

Chen Zhi clearly didn't know much about all this. His brightly shone as he said, "Kingdom of Chen is facing enemies from four sides. It is a dangerous moment. Since the strange thing happened in the south, the situation became so weird. The normal military attack didn't work anymore. However, everyday, there are fights between some superior cultivators from both sides. Powerful superior cultivators from the enemy forcibly breaks through the boundary and make surprise attacks, so less soldiers died, but more superior cultivators in our side die..."

"Since so, even though it is such a waste to have two Leading Generals in the south battle, we cannot call any of them back recklessly. If anything happens and the god given boundary is snatched by the enemy, it will be a disaster to us."

"Now that we have these marvelous dan beads, General Lan can let the superior cultivators in our side be on duty by turns so that the injured ones can be taken cared of. General Lan will be able to guard the south by himself. Prince Hua-Yang and his people can be back and go to the east or the west. That will save the kingdom from a great crisis."

The boy was enlightened again and he said, "No wonder you asked Lord Lan to take the dan beads to General Lan. It will go to General Lan, not to Prince Hua-Yang, who was in charge now. You are trying to remind Prince Hua-Yang and General Lan that one of them needs to head back. It's such a waste for both of them to stay

there.”

After the boy’s explanation, everybody understood it now.

They didn’t know that the Monarch of the Ling-Bao Hall giving three bottles of dan beads actually had such a profound meaning.

At the moment, Zuo Wuji interrupted, “Your highness, do you know... why Feng monarch didn’t say it clearly?”

Chen Zhi thought for a while with his eyes wide opened and said, “Well that... Feng Monarch is not in the court after all. He should avoid arousing suspicion on some issues. Even though he doesn’t care, somebody does.”

Zuo Wuji’s lit up as he clapped. He then said, “That’s right. You do have a good view.”

And then he added, “Very good.”

Ye Xiao glanced at Chen Zhi. He didn’t expect this little prince to be so smart.

...

At the moment, the auction was has reached its middle point, and it was getting more and more intense. The supreme level Pei-Yuan Dan beads were all sold, and the last bead was even sold for

sixty million.

The other dan beads were half sold. The lowest price of them reached a hundred million!

Although the other dan beads were all more valuable than Pei-Yuan Dan, it was still an astonishing thing that one hundred million was the lowest price!

It made this auction the most significant and most luxurious auction in history. The total amount of money that was spent in this auction would very likely be more than all other auctions together in one year.

It might even be a lot more.

Unlike the perfervid situation downstairs, the six guys in the Sky No. 2 Room and Sky No. 3 Room were showing dark and sullen faces.

They could be sure about one thing now. Apparently, Ling-Bao Hall didn't save them anything good!

The threats they had made meant nothing. If they kept sitting there doing nothing, they would bring nothing back!

Thus, they prepared to do something now.

They had to bring some dan beads back after all.

As for Ling-Bao Hall disgracing them, they would never let it go!

[How dare you disgrace the Starlight Sect/Sunlight Sect. It won't be forgiven...

Humph!]

At the moment, the only one group who didn't care and wasn't even going to pay attention to the auction, stopped being silent. It was the Sky No. 1 Room. Since Feng Monarch left the room, Master Bai had been quiet. Now, he finally spoke.

“Wan-Er, what's your thought?”

Wan-Er was surprised. She then understood the question. She answered, “Feng Zhiling? He is obviously a very capable man.”

Master Bai smiled. “Only capable?”

...

Chapter 298: The Price Is Too Low

Wan-Er nodded and said, “Certainly not. Whoever is capable like that is always a terrifying figure. No matter whether he is an evil or a noble, Feng Zhiling must be a frightful man. He is such a stable person, and such a man should have great achievements.”

Master Bai nodded slowly and said, “I can feel that he has deep hostility to me. It is unable to be solved.”

Wan-Er smiled and said, “That is reasonable. He should be. If he doesn’t see you as an enemy, that would be strange. After all, the kingdom you are trying to collapse is his home country. His spirit is to protect his home. If he didn’t show hostility against you, we should be alert.”

“Maybe I have been lonely for too long. What a good luck to have such an opponent now.” Master Bai smiled blandly. “If this Feng Zhiling can be a real enemy to me, that would be very exciting.”

He took a long breath out. “For such a long time, it has always been you and Xiu-Er who do the work. I haven’t moved for so long...”

Wan-Er spoke with a low voice, “Feng Zhiling is an outstanding figure... but he is not qualified enough to get you to a fight. Let Xiu-Er and me deal with him for now... If he truly has the capability to be against us, or even defeat us, it won’t be late for you to make a move then. After all, if he is just an easy piece to defeat, he won’t bring you any joy.”

Master Bai smiled and nodded.

“However, honesty goes first. I truly don’t want to work with him at all, but I promised I will. Since we have to take care of the two great sects, We have to do it well.”

Mater Bai spoke in a deep voice, “When we are in the battle, we fight for different sides. We surely can do whatever we like. However, now that I promised something, I shall accomplish it. No matter whether it helps our allies or our enemies!”

Wan-Er nodded. “Naturally. I understand.”

Wan-Er was actually so happy. It was a good surprise to her what happened this day. It meant her master’s legs would be cured after not long! To Wan-Er and Xiu-Er, that was a great thing to know!

However, when somebody was feeling happy, there would always be some others to ruin the joy, no matter whether it was on purpose or not.

At the moment, it happened.

When Wan-Er was feeling happy, she heard somebody speak in a deep voice, “We, the Sunlight Sect offer ten million for this Bone Ablutionary Dan bead! We will get it!”

The entire hall suddenly fell into silence.

Many people looked to where the voice came from. Some people lowered their heads and didn't do anything more.

The price of a supreme level Bone Ablutionary Dan bead should be at least 300 million in this auction!

The starting price was ten million!

The Sunlight Sect actually yelled out a price of ten million!

They didn't raise a bit of the price and wanted to take the item down on its starting price!

Apparently, they were bullying others!

They were playing the rascal. [We are the Sunlight Sect. We call ten million, and we will get the dan bead!]

It wasn't difficult to know the meaning behind it. [We are the Sunlight Sect. You better not be against me! We are going to buy this one for ten million! Who dares to snatch it, we will remember you...]

That was absolutely threatening!

Wan Zhenghao nearly jumped up when he heard that. The killing intent showed up again on Liu Changjun.

They both turned over to look at Ye Xiao. They were apparently waiting for his order.

Ye Xiao was just silently stood there with a smile on his face; it seemed like he didn't want to do anything.

Guan Wanshan, the master on the stage, was also stunned when he heard the bidding. He didn't know what to respond. After a while, he raised the hammer and said, "Ten million from Sunlight Sect the first time! Anybody who wants to raise the price? A supreme level Bone Ablutionary Dan bead! Any bids beyond ten million?"

He sounded weak; he was acting so differently than he had been in the stage earlier.

He realized that this supreme dan bead was very likely going to be bought by Sunlight Sect for ten million taels of silver. Nobody would dare to bid against the Sunlight Sect.

People would surely do the Sunlight Sect a favor. It was the No. 1 sect in the Land of Han-Yang after all.

However, an item that should be worth 300 million was now sold for ten million, and that was just the starting price. Now that it was in an auction... that was so unbelievably ridiculous if it was

sold this way.

Nobody said anything. People from the Sunlight Sect were smiling. [Wan Zhenghao didn't want to save us something good. Fine. We will take it our way. We will get something we want anyway.]

We will get to you soon after this!

We will take that dan-maker with us! We will not let anybody in Ling-Bao Hall go! Even though you have been holding a great auction, even though we are not going to have most of the supreme dan beads, we will have what you earn today. We will tell the whole world what would happen if anybody dares to offend us, the Sunlight Sect. Even though you are the No. 1 salesroom in the world, you won't be able to survive.]

“Ten million, the second time...” Guan Wanshan sounded tired. He was more like an old man now, and his voice sounded weaker and weaker.

In the Sky No. 1 Room, Wan-Er's face had turned green.

She should be in a good mood, yet she heard the words from the Sunlight Sect. She was actually threatened... Right after the Ling-Bao Hall and the House of the Chaotic Storm agreed to be allies, they were threatened!

That was not just a problem about annoying her.

Wan-Er felt like she was slapped hard on her face while she was smiling.

It should be a coincidence, but it was a bad one!

The flame of anger suddenly raised inside her.

It was a coincidence indeed, but somebody had to be blamed!

Master Bai's eyes showed a flash of cold light. [This Sunlight Sect must be very stupid. They have seen Feng Zhiling just walk out of my room. Even though he is not my friend, he should be somebody I am connected with, yet they still dared to do such a thing. They are clearly disgracing me!"]

"Ten million. The third..." Guan Wanshan raised the hammer. He was about to helplessly hit it and say the words he didn't want to say: "deal".

"Wait!" A clear but sullen voice sounded from the Sky No. 1 Room. "You actually want to take a supreme Bone Ablutionary Dan bead by ten million taels?"

The man who spoke for the Sunlight Sect was shocked. [I bid for the Supreme Dan bead by forcing them with the power of my sect. What does it have to do with your House of the Chaotic Storm?]

Wan of the Clouds loudly spoke in the hall, “This price is too low and it desecrates the fame of supreme dan. We, the House of the Chaotic Storm bids for it; 300 million! How much do you want to add, Sunlight Sect? You said you will get it, don’t you? You have to continue!”

...

Chapter 299: Stop Bidding? No Way!

Now, the salesroom fell into an absolute silence again.

The man of the Sunlight Sect who bid showed an embarrassed face.

The House of the Chaotic Storm was threatening more obviously than they did. They didn't even try to cover it.

They actually directly mentioned the Sunlight Sect!

[You want to suppress people with the name Sunlight Sect. Now I use the House of the Chaotic Storm on you!

You said you will get it? Well, continue the bidding then!

Do you dare?]

That was quite a retribution that everybody would love to see!

Everybody else sincerely felt good about it.

[We don't dare to mess with you Sunlight Sect, but somebody does!

And they did. Now, even you Sunlight Sect will have to stay

quiet.]

The man of Sunlight Sect didn't speak. He sat down with a dark face. The House of the Chaotic Storm was such a mysterious and powerful organization. The Sunlight Sect had to play deaf now. If they kept being tough on this, it would bring them a fight that would definitely cause a loss of them.

On the other side, Li Wanchun of the Starlight Sect nearly laughed out. [You deserve it! Didn't you think you are so awesome? Now you swallow your pride? Hahahaha...]

Now that the Sunlight Sect was quiet, Guan Wanshan was spirited. He said, "The supreme level Bone Ablutionary Dan. 300 million the first time. 300 million the second..."

"Wait!" Wan-Er said.

People was shocked. [Another 'wait'? What is it now?]

Wan-Er spoke loudly, "Sunlight Sect, do you think everything will be just fine if you play deaf? Didn't you say that you will surely get it? Now I name my price, yet you suddenly become deaf and mute? Is this the way you claim to be a super sect?"

The Sunlight Sect was directly pointed at again.

This time, it was about their sect's reputation. They knew they had to do something. If they kept playing deaf and mute, even if

they could get through this situation, things would be really bad for them when they returned to their sect!

The faces of the three people from the Sunlight Sect all turned red. They would rather hide under the table when they felt the eyes from everybody in the room.

They were surprised. [We never heard that Ling-Bao Hall and the House of the Chaotic Storm are connected.

Why are they helping the Ling-Bao Hall? They are helping with full efforts!

There must be something wrong about it.

That lady, Wan of the Clouds, is obviously quietly waiting for our response.]

The old man of the Sunlight Sect stood up; he looked friendly and calm. He smiled and said, “Although we really want to have this Bone Ablutionary Dan bead, since you, Lady Wan, bisd, we should surely make a step back for you.”

“Who do you think you are? Do I need you to?” Wan-Er said, “We don’t need you to make a step back. I don’t want people to think that I am playing some dirty trick against you, like I am using the power of the House of the Chaotic Storm to threaten you. I don’t want that reputation. I will not damage the fame of our house.”

That was basically swearing. She was talking about how dirty the Sunlight Sect was to use the power of their sect to force others.

The three people from the Sunlight Sect gritted with their teeth, yet they didn't dare to do anything. The old man tried to smile. "Lady Wan, you are taking it too seriously. Who on earth dares to disgrace the House of the Chaotic Storm? Besides, you are making a fair price here. That supreme dan bead should be yours."

"I am not making it too serious. I am telling the truth." Lady Wan cold said, "However, since you said that my price is fair, why did you make a price of ten million? What was that about? Is your ten million taels so valuable that it is equal to our 300 million?"

The men from the Sunlight Sect was furious.

[What the hell is wrong with this gal? We are trying so hard to be humble in front of her. Why does she have to get on us?

We have never offended you.]

They didn't know that if this happened fifteen minutes earlier, the House of the Chaotic Storm would never mind. They would wait and see how things would go; they might just let the Sunlight Sect take the dan bead by a price of ten million and see it as a joke.

After all, the House of the Chaotic Storm coming here this time was just to accompany their master. They never wanted to snatch anything.

Now, things were different.

Feng Zhiling went upstairs for what? For exactly what was happening now. If the item was sold for ten million to the Sunlight Sect, the agreement of cooperation would be as useless as fart.

Lady Wan-Er, Master Bai and the whole House of the Chaotic Storm would never allow that shame on them. How could they let new allies to be bullied like this right after they agreed on the alliance?

Nobody answered to the question about the price of ten million from Sunlight Sect.

It wasn't a good time to argue now.

If they dared to say anything, they would totally offend the House of the Chaotic Storm.

However, even though they didn't say anything and tried to give up, Wan-Er wouldn't let them go. She said, "The auction is to let the one who bids the highest price to have the item. It is a historical rule. You said you will surely get this dan bead, yet now after I bid, you actually become silent. You make it look like I am bullying you. I cannot take that. You have to bid now quickly!"

People all understood what was happening after she said so. [Lady Wan-Er decisively want to make some trouble for the

Sunlight Sect today!

They couldn't stop bidding, yet they wouldn't dare to go on bidding!

The Sunlight Sect must be very embarrassed...

They suppressed everyone so that they could take the dan bead with only ten million.

Now, their retribution has arrived, and their retribution was even forcing them to buy it!

Lets see what you can do now, Sunlight Sect!]

The old man from the Sunlight Sect sighed. His face was full of wrinkles. He said, "Since the lady has said so, we cannot let the House of the Chaotic Storm be disgraced. Well then, we bid 500 million!"

The old man was also a vigorous figure.

He actually added 200 million on the price.

He had clearly made his point: [We do this only to flatter you. If not so, we won't bid. Now we are showing enough respect to you, aren't we?]

It was easy for him to say that price, yet deep in his heart, it was painful like suffering a cut from knife.

As the top super sect in the world, when did they ever have such a shame before?

They were challenged, yet they had to smile, flatter, and bid.

He felt that he was like a prostitute now!

People all felt he fierceness from the House of the Chaotic Storm. They all felt fearful. [That is so terrifying! Only by talking, they have actually made the Sunlight Sect bow like this!]

...

Chapter 300: How Dare You Look Down Upon Me?

[Anyway, this Lady Wan of the Clouds should stop now. The Sunlight Sect has shown their respect after all! Killing only needs a head to be hit on the ground. Although the head is still on, it is almost on the ground!]

However...

Things went to an unexpected direction again. People didn't know that...

Wan-Er actually wouldn't let it go.

After the Sunlight Sect made a price of 500 million, Wan-Er spoke with a clear voice, "You really are determined to have it. So you added 200 million? Now, we make it one billion! What is your bid now? You won't just stop, will you? Since you are so determined."

That was not challenging now. It was insulting.

The crowd burst in an uproar.

They never expected things would reach such a point.

The old man from the Sunlight Sect opened his mouth and

couldn't say anything for a while. He was apparently stunned and didn't know what he should say.

[Killing only needs a head to be hit on the ground. I have already said that. It's like I am putting my face under your boot. You don't actually want to stop and you actually made such a move!

What the hell is going on?]

He knew he was wrong, so he acted like he put his face in front of her and asked her to slash him as long as she can get over it.

Yet she didn't go for it. Instead, she insisted, [No! I won't get my hands dirty! Since you dared to do the wrong thing, you better keep doing it wrong! Hurry up, keep it on!

I won't allow you to correct it!]

The old man from the Sunlight Sect understood what it was about. He was so furious that his face turned purple; his face expanded and shrank again and again like a frog breathing. He wanted to shout: [What do you want? That is too much! What do you want to do on us? Because you are more powerful, so you won't stop insulting us? What do you exactly want? Give me a clear answer!]

However, he didn't dare to really shout it out.

He hesitated for a while and then spoke in a humble voice, "It

seems you are the one who are determined to get it. We won't join the competition for this dan bead. You can take it, Lady Wan-Er."

People all felt sad for him when he said so.

He had shown his weakness in an extreme way!

He couldn't say anything feebler than this anymore. No matter how powerful the House of the Chaotic Storm was, they should stop now.

However, in the Sky No.1 Room, Lady Wan-Er sounded very tough, "What did you say? What do you mean I am determined to get it? What do you mean you won't join the competition? You think I am determined for it, so you decided to give it to me? Are you saying I am taking advantage of our power to bully others? Are you saying that we, the House of the Chaotic Storm, are taking advantage of our power to bully you? I don't need you to give it to me. We are both determined to get it. The one who calls the higher price gets it! Keep bidding! If you don't, that means you look down upon me!"

Suddenly, nobody made any sound. The entire place was silent.

[What the hell? Now she comes with the 'taking advantage of our power to bully others' theory. That is confusing right and wrong, swearing black is white indeed!

She is really not letting this go!]

She kept slashing on the face of the Sunlight Sect repeatedly! It didn't stop! It never ended!

[If you dare to say anything to argue, I will go and take your life!

If you don't say anything... Good. Just keep bidding. I call my price anyway. You keep coming after me. You have to!]

Everybody knew what this lady was doing now. [You bully people so that you can spend ten million to take the item that should be worth at least 300 million? I won't let you! You dare to bully people, I will bully you! Don't you want to take advantages of others? I will make you spend times of the price to take that item!]

She was obviously on the Ling-Bao Hall's side.

She was backing Ling-Bao Hall up.

Wan Zhenghao, Liu Changjun, and his assassins felt really good now!

It felt like having a sweet ice-cream in a super hot day.

They felt comfortable from top to bottom.

That was so good!

That couldn't be better!

Even Liu Changjun, who had never shown a single smile all the time, smiled. It lasted for a short time, but he did. To make this man smile, that was something even Ye Xiao couldn't manage to do!

[Now you keep acting arrogant! Now you keep suppressing us! Now you take advantages! Humph! Now you become a fool, ey? Now you don't know what to do, ey?]

The old man from the Sunlight Sect nearly spat out blood.

He had a bad feeling like he had just swallowed some sh*t.

Many times, he wanted to shout: [I am looking down upon you! So what!]

Yet while he was facing the mysterious and powerful House of the Chaotic Storm, he couldn't dare to do it.

Even if they forced him to really eat sh*t, he would have to do it well!

He would have to say thank you after eating that and keep praising its taste loudly!

If the House of the Chaotic Storm couldn't feel satisfied about them, the entire Sunlight Sect would be wiped up clean, young or old, men or women!

The old guy spoke with quivering lips, "I see. One and a half billion from us."

After that, he felt like his backbone was drawn away. His face looked pale, like he suddenly became a hundred years older.

He was so pathetic and mournful at the moment. Whoever saw him right now would wipe for him.

It was so piteous!

However, it seemed Lady Wan-Er didn't see such a piteous scene about him, or maybe she just didn't think it was piteous enough. Her voice sounded again loud and clear, "You are indeed determined. You are indeed a great sect. So it goes to three times of the price now! However, I am determined too. Three billion from us then!"

Now, let's not talk about that old man. All the others felt like puking with blood at the moment. [Lady, how far do you want to go on bullying him? He has already totally bent down on you!]

The old man was a big figure in the Sunlight Sect. His opinions were always important, and when he moved, there would always be people following him.

However, he was now distinctly insulted in the public.

With a stuffy humph, the old man wiped his mouth, and there was blood on his sleeve. He spoke with a sad and shrill voice, “Five billion! Lady Wan-Er, is this a proper price now?”

It stopped for a while, and then Lady Wan-Er said, “My master used to say that once we started to offend somebody, we should keep insulting him to the end. Now, that we have become enemies... I don’t mind to insult you more.”

The old man from the Sunlight Sect hurriedly shouted, “It is my own fault. Why did you say we are enemies? Lady Wan-Er, my sect will not admit it. My sect and your house are always friendly to each other. It is simply a mistake today...”

...